CHRYSAL:

OR, THE

ADVENTURES

OF A

GUINEA.

Wherein are exhibited
VIEWS of feveral striking Scenes,

WITH

Curious and interesting ANECDOTES, of the most Noted Persons in every Rank of Life, whose Hands it passed through,

AMERICA, ENGLAND, HOLLAND, GERMANY, and PORTUGAL.

—Hold the Mirror up to Nature,
To shew Vice its own Image, Virtue its own Likeness,
And the very Age and Body of the Times
His Form and Pressure.

SHAKESPEARS.

Qui capit, ille facit.

By an ADEPT.

VOL. IV.

LONDON:

Printed for T. BECKET and P. A. DE HONDT, at Tully's Head, near Surry-Street, in the Strand. MDCCLXV.

CHRYSMI

ant so

ADVENTURES

A. TO

G U I N E A

Witness are exhibited.

Virws of feveral finking 3 of ness,

HT1#

Cirilous and interesting Anglor of the cirilous in every Bank of Late, whole Hands a pasted throught.

Axamica, indiana, electron, Opticas's

To Read Vick the March to be Whate, in The Read Vick the wondresse, Winners to see Hittendle, And the very him and he was been and he was the form at I wellere,

Out come after back.

By an A D E P T

V O LANC



TONBOW

The second of th

THE CHARGE OF CHARLEST

THE

CONTENTS

OF THE

FOURTH VOLUME:

ZEZZZZZZZZZZZZZZZZZZZZZ

BOOK J.

CHAP. I. as a disas.

CHRYSAL continues the account of the members. The history of a remarkable person is given for a remarkable purpose. His pleasures bring himinto distress, from which he extricates himself by making them subservient to his interest, and gets into a good Keeping. Not content with the mother, he casts his eye upon the daughter also, but is disappointed, and forced to take up with a share of her fortune, for procuring her in marriage for another. He resolves to be a great Man; and for that purpose breaks with his Keeper,

when he has got from her all she had to give. Page 1

Co

CHAP. II.

Continued. He begins his scheme successfully by stealing a marriage. His late Keeper makes an artful demand of all the presents she had given him, which he answers as artfully. He advances in his scheme, by steps exactly in his character, and gets into favour with a great person. Chrysal makes some remarks on the origin of the affections of the human mind, and the different manner of breeding men, and horses, with the consequence.

CHAP. III.

Continued. He practifes a successful method for gaining the confidence of his new Patron, which he turns to good account. History of the lover who succeeded him in the good graces of his late Keeper. He strives to prevent his taking advantage of his influence over her; and finding he fails in that, fools him into distress, which brings his life in his power. He slights many motives, which might have had weight with others, and takes advantage of the opportunity to get rid of him, and all farther trouble about him. He continues to dupe him, till the last moment when his eyes are opened, and all comes out.

CHAP. IV.

Continued. A view of his political character introduces a maxim not sufficiently attended to. He fails in a great stroke, and makes so many wrong ones, that he is kicked out of power, and forced to be content with profit, which he pursues through thick and thin. An unhappy event gives him an opportunity of shewing his ingratitude to his late Patron, on the merit of which he rises to higher power than ever, which he wisely exerts behind the curtain, and leaves HIS TOOLS to hear the blame. An account of the just fruits of so much success concludes his story. Page 22

CHAP. V.

CHRYSAL leaves the convent. His master proceeds in character. He practises a new manner of courtship; and signalizes his talents for intrigue, by debauching the daughter of his friend. Her distress, when too late, gives him some slight qualms of conscience; but he soon recovers, and goes on in his enterprize.

CHAP. VI.

Continued. CHRYSAL's master makes bis triumph publick, by seducing his new mistress away from her father's house. The manner in which he imposed upon them both to effect this;

to e I

by by ikes bad ally. Etly with

the of

re-

for on, of ces ent

er.

m, He

ies 14

P.

this; with the consolation he gave her for some natural consequences of his gallantry. His triumph is compleated by her going upon the town, and her father's breaking his heart. Page 33

The H

bi

to

The state

111

la

ti

77

Va

(

CH

CHAP. VII.

"CHRYSAL's master pays bis court to a great person, who seems not much to relish his but mour, and expresses some unfashionable sentiments concerning polite pleasures. In the course of a regular progression Chrysal comes into the possession of a Beau." History of a Beau, with a journal of his manner of life for one day. Chrysal changes his service, in a common way, for that of a Lady of Fashion.

CHAP. VIII.

History of Chrysal's new mistress. She is brought into distress by her heauty, from which a lucky interview relieves her. The danger of arguing in favour of inclination against reason. Her friend puts her to school to learn manners, and afterwards marries her. His family shew impotent resentment, at which he is so enraged that he makes his will, by which he leaves her his whole fortune; and then dies. An uncommon instance of the good nature of the world.

CHAP.

CONTENTS,

for

try.

bon

bis

33

at

u-

i-

be

L

1-

1-

es A The common consequence of over-doing things. Her husband's relations find out a flaw in his will. The comfort of having good lawyers to keep up a client's spirits. For the advantage of having two strings to her how, she enters into an engagement of marriage, under an heavy penalty. The event of her law suit shews the prudence of this precaution. She is cast; her lover slies off, and she sues him for the penalty of his engagement. He begs the money among his friends, and then by a nice sinesse plays her own game back upon her, and slings her off with half. Chrysal changes his service. Page 55

CHAP. X.

CHRYSAL makes some out-of-the-way remarks on matrimony. Description and history of his new master. Chrysal vindicates his using a common expression. His master's first rise from a beggar to a foot-boy. He gains his master's favour, of which he makes the use natural to be expected from his sirst education. Some account of a relation of his principal's. The danger of giving advice. Chrysal's master infinuates himself into the Colonel's liking, and undermines his principal, in his regard.

fo

11

1

CH

Vo

Further account of the Colonel. Chrysal's master, in conjunction with a female associate proper for his purpose, compleats his scheme of alienating the Colonel's regard from his family, of which he gives a proof of a most extraordinary nature. A remarkable instance of Chrysal's master's talents for a particular kind of wit, with a striking account of the worthy manner in which he and his fair associate acquitted themselves of the trust reposed in them by the Colonel.

Page 71

CHAP. XII.

CHRYSAL's master receives an account of the death of the colonel. He sinds after much deliberation that he cannot sling his worthy associate out of the whole spoil, and therefore prudently resolves to share it with her by a marriage, of which he draws a comfortable pisture. He urges his suit, and she strives to evade it by arguments consistent with both their characters. He carries his point, in a particular manner.

CHAP. XIII.

Account of the methods, which CHRYSAL's master took to obviate the effects of his principal's resentment, with the characteristick conver-

RY-

male

s bis

gard

ark-

lents rik-

bich

Co-

the

uch

thy

re-

ber

2m-

She

ith

nt,

77

L's

in-

ick

er-

conversation that passed between them, on the former's avowing the colonel's will. Chrysal's master over-shoots his mark, and provokes his principal to do more than he ever intended. An uncommon instance of the justice of the world. Chrysal's master obliges the lady to court him in her turn, and at length marries her. The consequences of such a marriage, and fruits of the success of all their schemes.

Page 84

CHAP. XIV.

CHRYSAL's master designs to set up a coach; but wants a material article, toward making a proper figure with it. He consults with an HERALD, who gives him an elaborate difsertation not the most pleasing to bim, on COATS OF ARMS, and the modern methods of making them, in which be unfolds many curious mysteries, and undertakes at last, on proper encouragement, to make bim-a gentleman. CHRYSAL changes bis fervice. Conversation between bis new master, and an ANTIQUARIAN. Curious arguments, by which he proves the genuineness and importance of certain relicks of antiquity. CHRY-SAL changes bis service. 90

CHAP. XV.

A modest method of seeking fame. CHRYSAL's master confirms himself in his resolution to Vol. IV.

gratify an uncommon curiosity, by a great example. The judicious and learned manner, in which he classed and entered his new acquisitions. Curious remark on the value of books. He goes to an authon, where he makes an extraordinary purchase. Chrystall changes his service, for that of the Authoneer. Specimen and effects of his new master's eloquence, learning, and judgement.

Page 103

1

Mo

CHAP. XVI.

An unsavoury accident stops bim short in his barangue. He turns off the jest, with another, and accounts learnedly for what has bappened. The real cause, and consequence of that accident. Reslections on auctioneering, and the causes of its success.

CHAP. XVII.

CHRYSAL's master is visited by a CONNOIS-SEUR, to whom he gives a short receipt how to make his pictures sell, and makes some striking remarks, on the disregard people shew for their families, which send his visitor away in a buff.

CHAP. XVIII.

CHRYSAL's master receives an agreeable summons. His encomiums on the generosity of me-chants, and account of the way many of them

them acquire reputation for taste and judgement. He meets the merchant, who consults him on a different branch of his business, from that which he expected. Chrysal's master, in order to encourage his customer, gives a large account of his oun abilities, and opens some curious secre's in his business. A hargain is struck to the mutual satisfaction of both parties; and Chrysal changes his service for that of the merchant. Page 121

CHAP. XIX.

Motive of CHRYSAL's new master for making such a bargain, with the many and great advantages a merchant may make of being in the bouse. A short sket b of an election. The curious method, which CHRYSAL's mafter took to evade the laws against bribery. He takes offence at the unreasonable presumption of his constituents, and resolves to make the most of the bargain be bas bought from them, which by a singular piece of management be proposes to make cheaper than they think. CHRYSAL changes bis service, for that of the idol of an inn. The consequences of electioneering. Some account of CHRYSAL's new mistress. He quits ber service, for a curious purpose. An expedient to prevent the fale of poison for mind, and body. CHRY-SAL again changes his service. 127

CHAP.

2 2

mannew
value
re be

the new nt.

103

bis bas ence

II

ISow me

16

or

of of

m

Account of Chrysal's new master. His beroick spirit, and resolution to push for a pension or a pillory. Meeting between him and a poet, who turns the tables upon him. A curious method of forming a judgement of a work of genius. Chrysal's master is beaten out of all his art, and for once buys a book by quality, not quantity. The value of an authour's name. Chrysal changes his service.

CHAP. XXI.

Some account of the company, to which Chrysal's new master went. His behaviour to
a young female, who accosted him in his
way home. He takes her to a tavern for
an uncommon purpose, where he treats her
uncommonly, and goes home with her, from
as uncommon a motive. Account of what he
saw in her habitation, with the manner in
which he behaved there. He takes another
lodging for the whole family, where he leaves
them abruptly, to save himself and them
trouble.

SECTION SECTIONS

BOOK II.

HR

car

ing

nec

con

int

Con

tic

vi

CHR

ac

b

0

b

K

BOOK II.

im

m.

15

75

ue

25

4

CHAP. I.

Reason of his having been bred to, and miscarried in a particular prosession. Interesting remarks on the different kinds of merit necessary to eminence in different prosession, consirmed by striking instances of their successin each. Natural consequence of his being forced into a prosession against his inclination. He is compelled by distress to exert his abilities. Contradictions in his character, and the particular turn of his works accounted for. He wists his new samily. Affecting story of an officer.

Page 152

CHAP. II.

CHRYSAL's master carries bim to visit an old acquaintance, who behaves in character, on bearing the officer's story, and surprizes Chrysal's master with an account of his having turned Patriot. The general motive for such a step; with some remarks on the difference between practice and prof sion, in different instances. Insignificancy of private characters in attacks upon a ministry, and why. Restections on the origin, and use of satire, and the abuse of the terms good and

and ILL-NATURE, with the reason why so many cry out against satire. CHRYSAL changes his service, in a common way.

Page 163

b

C

CI

CHAP. III.

CHRYSAL fums up the character of his late master. Different opinions for and against the propriety, and benefit of SATIRE. The former supported by good authority. Reason of some inconveniences attending the indulgence of such a turn. Character of CHRY-SAL's new master concluded from a former sketch. He waits upon bis Patron. Charatter of bim, with his motives for such a patronage. He gives striking reasons for objecting to some parts of CHRYSAL's master's pampblet, which the other makes some weak attempts to vindicate. CHRYSAL's master enjoys the pleasure of tracing his own fame. 172

CHAP. IV.

Chrysal's master receives an unwelcome visit, at an unseasonable time. His extraordinary behaviour before his superiours. He is sent to prison. Chrysal makes some unpopular remarks, on certain interesting subjects. Consequences of his master's imprisonment, with an account of his behaviour in it.

2000

CHAP.

CHAP. V.

by so

SAL

163

late

ainst

The

dul-RY-

mer

ba-

ba

for

af-

me

wn

72

âr,

ry

nt

4 -

5.

6

9

CHRYSAL's master is visited in prison, by bis patron; and from what motives. His conduct, on being set at liberty, and the confequences of it. Remarkable grounds on which he was set at liberty, with a conjecture at the reason of sixing upon them. CHRYSAL makes an enquiry into certain matters, much talked of, and little understood. Page 185

CHAP. VI.

Chrysal's master takes a foreign tour. Remarks upon national restections, and attacks upon private characters. Chrysal's master is called to an account for certain improper liberties, by a very improper person, whom he treats with uncommon propriety. Chrysal makes some out-of-the-way restections on a question much canvassed to little purpose.

CHAP. VII.

CHRYSAL's master's late conduct draws bim into a new scrape, in which he comes off but second-best. He takes advantage of his misfortune to make his escape from a greater. He suffers the resentment of his enemies, as far as they can reach him; and meets from his friends the sate of all useless tools, after having served them with improbable success. A striking instance of the advantage of

an upright judge, and equal laws. CHRY-SAL changes his service. Page 196

CHAP. VIII.

Reason of the joy, with which Chrysal was received by his new master. Account of a curious, though not uncommon way of getting a living. Conversation between Chrysal's master, and his guest. They compare notes on their different attempts in the literary trade. Chrysal's master is encouraged by his friend from his own example. A remarkable account of a certain matter, that made much noise.

CHAP. IX.

CHRYSAL's master makes some striking remarks, on his friend's account of this mysterious transaction, and draws inferences from it, not commonly attended to. He entertains his friend with a curious song, who makes an important hit, just in his own character, upon it. Chrysal's master boggles a little at first, at his friend's proposal, but is encouraged by his example to undertake it. 209

CHAP. X.

CHRYSKL's master pursues his scheme, and violates moral honesty to serve the cause of virtue and religion. He waits upon his patron, who honestly resuses a character, to which

take tive anot the bone of in a

sto Believe

CHR ma ovi fet ba

of

fera

po C fu

m

Cı

96

as

a

35

y

7

which he knows he has no right; but undertakes the affair from a more prevailing motive, in which he is remarkably affifted by another person, of less modesty, who pleads the cause of religion and virtue in vain, till honour at length turns the scale in their savour. Chrysal's master is disappointed of his hopes, and makes use of an expedient in character, to escape from the just reward of all his labours. Chrysal changes his service. Page 214

CHAP. XI.

CHRYSAL again changes his service. His new master is obliged to pay expedition fees, to get over artificial delays. He and his mistress set out on a long journey, to do what might have been better done at home. CHRYSAL makes some interesting restetions, on a most important subject. Story of CHRYSAL's master. CHRYSAL continues his restetions on the same subject, which he considers in a farther, and most affecting point of view. CHRY-SAL changes his service.

CHAP. XII.

CHRYSAL's new master strikes out an adventure. He is smitten with a girl in a travelling-waggon, and changes his appearance to get admission to her. Account of the company in the waggon. A good-natured mistake

mistake of one of the passengers gives occasion to a broil, which is put an end to by an accident, that does not mend the matter.

Page 228

CHRY

ter

vi/

of

wi

an

be

A

111

ni

133

b

CH

CHAP. XIII.

CHRYSAL's master experiences some comfortable consequences from the obliging disposition of the waggoner. He pursues his design, by paying common civility to his mistress's mother. Conversation, and behaviour of the company. Chrysal's master, in the pursuit of his design, meets an adventure that cools his passion, and reassembles the company, when they are all like to be at a fault, till one of them luckily hits off the scent.

CHAP. XIV.

The advantage of a ready assurance. The methodist accounts curiously for what he has done; and turning the tables upon Chrysal's master charges him with robbery, who is thereupon obliged to discover himself, but is contradicted by one of the company, who hoasts of a curious acquaintance with him in his own character. He is luckily recognized by a footman, whose master extricates him from his distress, and makes out the mistakes, that had caused so much consustant.

CHAP.

asion

228

able

10-

be

17-

at

13-

a

4

CHRYSAL gives a striking account of his master. He arrives in London, and pays a visit to his mistress. His curious method of courting. His mistress makes him a present of half her fortune beforehand, in return for which he promises to marry her next day, and then goes to his girl. Difference in his hebaviour to the two naturally accounted for. An uncommon guest at a wedding, with as uncommon a manner of celebrating a nuptial-night, shew a still more uncommon instance of matrimonial complaisance. Chrysal changes his service.

CHAP. XVI.

CHRYSAL makes some reflections, not likely to be much regarded. His master pays a love-visit to a young lady, whose father interposes unpolitely, and makes some out-of-the-way objections. CHRYSAL'S master bits upon a scheme for getting over them. He proposes marriage on certain terms, which are agreed to, and the day fixed at a little distance. 254

CHAP. XVII.

CHRYSAL's master is privately married. Not satisfied with one wife for love, he wants another for money. He proposes the matter to his wife, on whose refusal, he discloses his grand scheme; in which, deep as it is laid, he

be bas the mortification to find himself anticipated, and his own weapons turned upon himself. Consequences of this discovery. Chrysal's master takes a common method of silencing scandal. Chrysal changes his service. Page 261

CHAP. XVIII.

CHRYSAL gives an account of certain interesting occurrences. An extraordinary definition of a common word. Great expectations disappointed. The consequence of planning in the closet the operations of the field, with the origin of that sagacious practice. 270

CHAP. XIX.

Continued. The natural event of such a situation. The general, victorious over himself, quits the pursuit of military glory for the practice of the virtues of peace. Persidy of the enemy justly punished. The army is formed again under the command of a German, and a sugar-plumb given to the English to stop their mouths at such an insult. 275

CHAP. NUL

the second of the second second second

CHRYSELT MEMORIES WIND STEELSTEELS

White the report by the best and a shorth

CHRYSAL:

CHR

f

16

1

-pit



ery.
bod
bis

A-

ni-

ns

0



CHRYSAL

OR, THE Wall to coult

a northlety sat phons

ADVENTURES

OF A

GUINEA.

CHAP. I.

CHRYSAL continues the account of the members:
The history of a remarkable person is given for a remarkable purpose. His pleasures bring him into distress, from which he extricates himself by making them subservient to his interest, and gets into a good Keeping. Not content with the mother, he casts his eye upon the daughter also, but is disappointed, and forced to take up with a share of her fortune,

tune, for procuring her in marriage for another. He resolves to be a GREAT MAN; and for that purpose breaks with his KEEPER, when he has got from her all she had to give.

NE of the most specious arguments alledged against the obligation to virtue, is the success that is often observed to attend the violation of it, in the general pursuits of the world. Of this you see the strongest instance, which this age has afforded, in that man, who sits at the left hand of the superiour, wrap'd up in the consciousness of his own importance, and smiling contemptuously at the company around him, while they believe he is joining in their mirth.

A particular account of his life would lead into too great a length. It would feem a fatire on mankind, rather than a detail of the actions of one man. However, as a short sketch of it may be of advantage, by unveiling this mystery in the conduct of heaven; and proving the insufficiency of the highest prosperity to confer happiness, even in the hour of attainment, when that prosperity is not founded in; and procured by virtue, I will just run over the great heads of his story, with that brevity, which the disagreeableness of the subject naturally dictates.

.1V .10V The

T

of h

ever

patri

bega

noth

expe

trica

ting

this

aları

by I

peri

kne

plea

pect

reft

nou

fix 1

repa

on I

tion

pro

off

aw

whi

of a

ble

The opening of his life gave no prospect of his present exalted station. Pleasure in every licentious excess soon dissipated a small patrimony; and he was hardly entered into man's estate, when want, of his own earning,

began to stare him in the face.

The peculiar cast of a man's mind is in nothing more strongly shewn, than in the expedients he has recourse to, in order to extricate him from difficulties. Instead of quitting the vices, which had brought him into this embarrassment, he resolved on the first alarm to build his hopes of fortune on them, by pursuing them in a different manner. Experienced in all the mysteries of intrigue, he knew that age and deformity will purchase pleasures, for which youth and beauty expect to be flattered, if not even paid. Unrestrained therefore by any scruples of honour or conscience, he directly determined to fix upon some wealthy female of the former class, and never doubted making her passion repay him manifold, what he had expended on the gratification of his own.

I see the abhorrence with which the mention of such a scheme strikes you. Venal prostitution in the semale sex, though cut off from every other method of prolonging a wretched existence, is the lowest state to which it can sink. What then can be said of a man, who, uncompelled by such irresistible necessity, voluntarily gives up the dignity

B 2

of

The

ano-

AN;

PER,

ed to

ents

VII-

d to

pur-

the

ord-

d of

fness.

con-

him,

heir

lead

m a

the

hort

un-

nea-

the

ven

rof-

by

eads

dif-

dic-

of his nature, and hiring himself to be the slave of lusts, which are a disgrace to it, contentedly eats the bread of infamy, and vice? Language yet wants a name for such baseness.

This hopeful scheme was no sooner formed, than carried into execution. As his character gained him easy access to all such as were proper for his purpose, he immediately fingled out an old dowager, in whose dispofal the dotage of a dying husband had left the accumulated wealth of several ages of fuccessful industry. Such a quarry engaged all his attention in the pursuit. He paid his addresses to her, though destitute of every thing that could raise natural defire, with fo much affiduity and warmth, that she readily received him into her good graces; and in return for the pleasure she found in his conversation, lavished her fortune upon him with a profusion that even exceeded his hopes.

From the principle on which he set out, it may be judged that he did not neglect to improve such an opportunity of repairing his broken fortunes, and laying up a fund for a suture day, out of the overslowing of her untimely sondness. But unbounded as her generosity was, he was far from being content, while any thing farther remained possible to be got from her. Beside the great wealth, which was directly in her power, a very large estate was by family-settlements to descend

desc by mod mer as n

for view print an fert This let felf post to a he this

ter' foly to who per poil ow poil him

me

nat

descend to an only daughter, whom she had by her husband. As soon therefore as her modest lover had got possession of the former, his heart yearned for the latter also, with as much greediness, as if his wants were only

encreased by his acquisitions.

But though he was seldom long at a loss for means to accomplish any thing he had in view, as he was under no restraint from principle in the choice of them, there was an obstacle in his way here, which all the fertility of his genius could not surmount. This was his connection with the mother, the nature of which he well knew would never let her consent to a scheme destructive of itself; for he had no fear of her making opposition from motives of honour or virtue to any thing that did not clash with that, as he found none in his own conscience even to this, though contrary to the first principles of nature.

Since he could not therefore get the daughter's whole fortune, by marrying her, he refolved to exert his influence on her mother to give her to some person of his chusing, who should divide it with him, as a recompence for making the match. For this purpose, he pitched upon a near relation of his own, who readily gave into his scheme, though possessed himself of a fortune that placed him above the necessity of stooping to such meanness. The consent of the guardian-

B 3 mother,

-Jajij I

to

e the

vice?

enels.

cha-

ch as

ately

ifpo-

left

s of

aged

d his

very with

The

ces;

him

his

out,

his

ra

her

her

on-

Mi-

eat

mother, as he foresaw, was easily obtained. She was happy in having such an opportunity of proving her regard for him, as well as of removing her daughter out of his reach, his attention to whom, while his first project was in his head, had not escaped her jeasous notice.

His share of this prize, added to his other gains, made him now a man of confiderable fortune, and fired him with an ambition of making a figure in the state. To accomplish this, the natural turn of his mind fuggeffed it to him to marry into some family, the interest and splendour of which might drown the obscurity of his own original, and affift his hopes. Nor did he apprehend any opposition to this scheme, from the same quarter, that had defeated the former. He had now gotten from her, all that she had to give; and the fame principle which prompted him to be the hired drudge of her loofe defires, made him find no scruple to leave her fervice, when the was no longer able to pay the wages of it.

Nothing is easier, than to make matter for dispute. On her expressing her resentment, with the haughtiness which she thought the circumstances of the connection between them gave her a right to assume, as she had on many occasions before, at something he had done with design to provoke her, his sensibility took fire, and in just indignation at

treat-

trea

to 1

dre

abl

pre

fro

per

im

m

for

m

ad

di

ed

n

treatment to improper for a man of bonour to submit to, he bound himself by the most dreadful imprecations to shake off fo intolerable a yoke forever, and fo flung out of her prefence, lo stammars vd bassiving and

ned.

nity

ll as

ach.

pject

lous

ther

able

of

lifh

ted

in-

Wn

Tift

p-

ar

rad

to

ofe

ve

to

er It-

ht

n

d

d

Ĩ-

t

-

Her furprize at a behaviour, fo different from what he had ever shewn before, fuspended her resentment, and she waited with impatience for a repetition of the blandishments with which he had been accustomed to footh her anger. But what was her aftonishment to find, that instead of making any advances of the kind, he had actually withdrawn himfelf from her house. This alarmed her. In the arrogance of her former fuperiority, the loss of which she was not yet sensible of, she fent him a peremptory summons, to attend her directly. But her commands had now loft their weight, and she received a refufal, the more cutting for being couched in cool, equivocal politeness. This drew on him an epistolary torrent of upbraidings, expostutations, and at last, of the most tender intreaties; but all were equally ineffectual. He pleaded his rash vow, lamented the cruel obligation of it; and as the began to be foftened by this address, hinted at a fense of religion, and even distantly recommended it to her, as the best confolation under the croffes, and afflictions of life.

Such fentiments from him could mean nothing but meering infult. In that light the she was happy in having such an opportunity of proving her regard for him, as well as of removing her daughter out of his reach, his attention to whom, while his first project was in his head, had not escaped her jeasous notice.

His share of this prize, added to his other gains, made him now a man of confiderable fortune, and fired him with an ambition of making a figure in the state. To accomplish this, the natural turn of his mind suggested it to him to marry into some family, the interest and folendour of which might drown the obscurity of his own original, and affift his hopes. Nor did he apprehend any opposition to this scheme, from the same quarter, that had defeated the former. He had now gotten from her, all that she had to give; and the fame principle which prompted him to be the hired drudge of her loofe defires, made him find no scruple to leave her fervice, when the was no longer able to pay the wages of it.

Nothing is easier, than to make matter for dispute. On her expressing her resentment, with the haughtiness which she thought the circumstances of the connection between them gave her a right to assume, as she had on many occasions before, at something he had done with design to provoke her, his sensibility took fire, and in just indignation at

treat-

trea

to f

dre

able

pre

fro

pen

im

foo

me

dr

ed

De

fei

m

m

TC

C

te

treatment to improper for a man of bonour to fubmit to, he bound himself by the most dreadful imprecations to shake off fo intolerable a yoke forever, and fo flung out of her presence. To Prismosta ve

ned.

nity

las

ich,

ject

ous

her

ble

of

ifh

ed

in-

wn

list

p-

arad

to

יד-

fe

ve

to

er

t-

it

n

d

d

-

t

Her furprize at a behaviour, fo different from what he had ever shewn before, fuspended her resentment, and she waited with impatience for a repetition of the blandishments with which he had been accustomed to footh her anger. But what was her aftonishment to find, that instead of making any advances of the kind, he had actually withdrawn himfelf from her house. This alarmed her. In the arrogance of her former fuperiority, the loss of which she was not yet sensible of, she fent him a peremptory summons, to attend her directly. But her commands had now loft their weight, and she received a refufal, the more cutting for being couched in cool, equivocal politeness. This drew on him an epistolary torrent of upbraidings, expostutations, and at last, of the most tender intreaties; but all were equally ineffectual. He pleaded his rash vow, lamented the cruel obligation of it; and as the began to be foftened by this address, hinted at a fense of religion, and even distantly recommended it to her, as the best consolation under the croffes, and afflictions of life.

Such fentiments from him could mean nothing but fneering infult. In that light she took them. However, as the nature of the affair made it improper for her to open her mind too explicitely, she resolved to play his own game back upon him, and affect to be convinced by arguments, of which she hoped to take advantage, at a proper time, though in a manner very different from his intention, in applying them.



CHAP. II.

Continued. He begins his scheme successfully by stealing a marriage. His late Keeper makes an artful demand of all the presents she had given him, which he answers as artfuly. He advances in his scheme, by steps exactly in his character, and gets into favour with a great person. Chrysal makes some remarks on the origin of the affections of the human mind, and the different manner of breeding men, and horses, with the consequence.

HILE she was pleasing herself with this thought, he had carried the most difficult part of his scheme into execution. The passion for play, which marks the character of the present age, though it really counteracts every social virtue, is yet the means of associating all kinds and rank of people, who have,

have for. four a n contract fam profipite foor by a

cou pur gav was of wife

fam

ceff rap tref As ftro ma in c

VET

of ver

plin

the

her

lay

to

fhe

ne,

his

by

25

ad

y. byb

e-

of

ht. - f

have, or even appear to have money to play for. At meetings for this purpose, he had found means to make an acquaintance with a nobleman, who was so pleased with his conversation, studied designedly to please him, that he admitted him to an intimacy in his family, which he knew so well how to improve with one of his daughters, that in despite of the disparity of age and rank, he soon prevailed upon her to crown his hopes by a private marriage, as the consent of her family could not be expected.

As the immediate fortune of the lady could not be thought an object of mercenary pursuit, when the first emotions of resentment gave place to reslection, his plea of passion was admitted as an excuse, for this violation of the sacred laws of hospitality; and his wife's father unknowingly compleated his design, by exerting all his interest, which was very great, to advance him in the state.

The secres, with which it had been necessary for him to conduct this affair, and the rapidity of his success, prevented his late mistress from making any attempt to defeat it. As soon however as she recovered from the first stroke of her astonishment, at the news of his marriage, she proceeded to put her scheme in execution. Accordingly she sent him compliments of congratulation on this happy fruit of his conversion, exhorting him to persevere in it; and professed her resolution to imitate

mainder of her days to the duties of virtue and religion, as a proof of which she proposed to begin by restoring to her injured daughter, as much as possible of the fortune, which the considence of her husband had lest in her power, and she had unhappily lavished in pursuits, to the criminal nature of which

he had opened her eyes.

As all, that was not diffipated beyond recovery was what she had given to him; and her restoring it therefore must depend on his making a restitution to her first, he was not a moment at a loss for the drift of this ex. traordinary instance of penitence, nor how to treat the account of it. He immediately returned her an answer, congratulating her in his turn, with fincerity equal to her own, on her pious resolutions, the intention of which, he faid, would make amends for the impossibility of carrying them into execution, any farther than by stinting herself to the indispensible necessaries of life, and laying up the rest of her large income to supply the place of the fums she had expended.

Such an answer necessarily drew on an explanation, and of course a demand of the several presents she had made him in the course of their dalliance, and knew he had laid up, as he lived at her expence all the time. This was no more than he expected. He replied therefore, without being in the least discon-

certed,

cer

had

pay ten

TE

wh

03

mu

att!

has

tha

del

mi

haj

his

wh

gra

tis

to

fuc

bet

to

ou

COI

thi

of

the

me

hei

531

re-

tuc

ro-

red

ne.

efc

fh-

ich

re-

nd

his

ot

x.

W

ly

er

n,

of

he

n,

1-

P

e

,

S

,

payment for the time he had devoted to attending upon her; and for that reason thought it inconsistent with that regard for justice, which is inseparable from true piety, for her to demand such a restitution, especially as she must be sensible that he could not now make it, without doing wrong to his wife, who had an undoubted property in every thing that belonged to him; and concluded with desiring that a correspondence which might be misunderstood, and so disturb his connubial happiness, might be dropped between them.

This fufficiently explained the motives of his conduct; and the defpicable fituation, which she had brought herself to. However the was obliged to acquiefce with the best grace fre could, without even the poor fatisfaction of fewenge; for he had taken care to infert in every paragraph of his letters, fuch aneed ores of the connection that had been between them, that it was impossible for her to hiew them in order to expose him, without expoling borlelf at the fame time to the contempt and deteftation of the world. From this time therefore all intercourse beyond that of common civility was broken off between them; the fome confequences of their former connection, which happened even after her death, make one of the most striking ed mort nomadan B 6 sorred

parts of his story, as shall be observed in the

proper place. an non tool more beviseen bad

The first estays of a man's disposition indicate the rule by which his whole life will be conducted. The interest of the family into which he had thus stolen, had no fooner raised him to some degree of power, than he aspired to the highest, to attain which he refolved to purfue a method exactly in his character. This was to ingratiate himfelf, he regarded not by what means, with one of the first personages in the state, whose interest he meant to make use of, as long as it could ferve him, and then fly in his face to shew his independance. Nature had never endowed a man with qualifications fitter for fuch a purpole. He was every thing, to every man. The gay were struck with his wit; the grave with his folidity; while an appearance of candour and fincerity, that lulled fufpicion to fleep, won the confidence of all with whom he conversed; all which powers of pleasing were, by a servility of disposition derived perhaps from a fervile birth, proftituted to the humour of those, whom he desired to please, however contrary to his own.

I fee your curiofity at my faying, that the fervility of his disposition might perhaps be derived from a fervile birth. You want to have the origin of the affections of the human soul explained, whether they are imprinted on it, at its first emanation, from the source

fource of all existence, or received by traduction from the immediate parents of the body, or only caused by the casual operation of external objects. But this, as I have faid in other cases, is a difficulty that I am not at liberty to folve, as the question is not yet determined by the learned; though much ingenious reafoning has been displayed on every side of it. This only I shall say, that the practice of mankind feems to contradict the fecond of thefe opinions, who shew no regard to the dispositions of those, on whom they propagate their own species, though they trace back the pedigree of a dog, or an horse, for many generations, for fear of any fault in the breed; the reason, you may perhaps imagine, why the brutes bred with such care, are found so much seldomer to degenerate, than the offspring of the greatest men. integration of presentation.

A S floor as he had influenced himful force

Parson, by an opposited conveys of old his

daw baker any Caribed as lain la armag the cities are so mayrows care bling into an

important coefficience. The terrebed beautiful were

series dated sie ou de in Steinstein se

The the pleatured with the of the deliment

on dome as dome and to make C HA P.

the very faculties of his houl feemed to move only by the other's will.

vac 1

the

in-

vill

ily

ner

nan

he his

elf,

of eft

ild

ew

w-

ch

ry

t;

ar-

ifth of

e-

ed

to

be

te

to 11-

n-

he

ce

Toda arbid CHAP. HI.

Continued. He practifes a fuccefsful method for gaining the confidence of his new Patron, which be turns to good account. History of the lover who succeeded bim in the good graces of bis late KEEPER. He strives to prevent his taking advantage of his influence over ber; and finding be fails in that, fools him into distrefs, which brings his life in his power. He Rights many motives, which might have bad weight with others, and takes advantage of the opportunity to get rid of bim, and all farther trouble about bim. He continues to dupe bim, till the last moment when his eyes are opened, and all comes out.

A S foon as he had infinuated himself into the pleasurable liking of his designed Patron, by an unwearied exertion of all his powers of pleasing, he directly proceeded with the nicest art, to improve that liking into an important confidence. He watched his every action, word, and look, till he discovered the peculiar turn of his mind, to which he accommodated his own fo implicitely, that the very faculties of his foul feemed to move only by the other's will.

They

They who are above deceir themselves, fuspect it not in others. That felf-love, which is inseparable from humanity, was easily imposed upon by such art. His Patron liked himself in him; and insensibly came to think all referve unnecessary with one, whose foul appeared to be only the shadow of his own. This foon gave him real confequence, as the numbers, whom interest or inclination actach'd to his Patron, found it necessary to take the lead from him; and enabled him to grafp at every opportunity of engroffing power, and acquiring wealth, to supply those pleasures, which he had quitted only from necessity and returned to again, the moment he had the means of obtaining them,

But all this torrent of success was not able to divert his attention for a moment from the smallest matter in which his avarior was concerned; as he gave the strongest proof in the following affair, to explain which I must look back to the woman, whose lavish fondness first raised his fortune, as it happened in consequence of his connection with her, though some considerable time after her

death.

It is observed that habitual indulgence continues the passions proper to youth, after the fire that first supplied them is exhausted, and the end for which they were implanted by nature become impossible.

Old

Old as this woman was, when our hero deferted her, and to appearance as incapable of feeling, as raising defire, she had so long accustomed herself to the gratification of every fenfual appetite, that she could not bear to live without a lover. The difficulty was, how to fix upon a proper object: for as interest was her only attraction, the first advances must necessarily come from her; and then her prodigality to her last had put it out of her power to make it worth the while of fuch another as the might like to fupply his place. Precluded thus from much delicacy in her choice, necessity directed her to one of her own domesticks, fomething in whose circumstances pointed him out more particularly to her notice.

There is not a more despicable instance of vanity, than being ashamed of the connections of nature, because of poverty, when that poverty is not the effect of vice. A far distant female relation had from this vanity bequeathed to her a very considerable fortune, to which this man should have been heir, had not the lowness of his condition, a motive sufficient to have influenced a generous heart in his favour, made her think it would be a disgrace to her to be succeeded by him; for which reason she wantonly deprived him of the inheritance of his ancestors, to give it to one, who did not want it. Dispirited by such unnatural injustice, for which the law

afforded

hi

at

la

la

th

fo

p

th

CC

hi

P

hi

P

W

as

ar

afforded no redress, he was no longer able to purfue the industry, that had hitherto been his support; and funk into such distress, that his despair made him at length throw himself at the feet of her, who enjoyed his spoils, to beg relief, spiner and antonne of bushins s

g

0

1

t

This happened critically at the time when her inclinations for a new lover began to get the better of her grief for the loss of the last. Softened by what she had herself so lately felt, she pitied his distress; and as all the tenderer passions are allied, that pity was foon warmed into fuch love, as she was capable of feeling. Accordingly, as she had taken him into her family, on his first application, she now entrusted him with the management of her affairs, to give colour for the further intimacy she had in view. The consequence was natural. He readily took hints, too plain to be over-looked; and she kept up bis assiduity in ber service, by some presents in hand, and grants of more, charged most of them indeed on the inheritance of his ancestors, which she had settled upon his predecessor in her favour after her death, till when they were not to take place or be difcovered, to avoid his reproaches, as well as those of her daughter and her husband for such a repetition of her former follies; and because she did not chose to streighten her own circumstances, by the immediate payment of them. But these wages of vice, howhowever welcome in his present indigence,

proved faral to him in the end.

The hero of my tale, who faw the rife of this new favourite, and knew from experience on what it must be founded, though the affected to attribute her notice of him to gratitude to his relation, and retributory juftice to himself, gave him a genteel and profitable employment under one of the many which he himself enjoyed in the state, profeffedly in compliment to her, but really to attach him to his own interest, and prevent his exerting his influence on her to obtain fuch grants as before-mentioned; for the turn of his own mind made him suspect every thing that was possible; and such is the partiality of man to himself, that he who has been ungrateful to all mankind, will yet expect gratitude from others.

Proud of this preferment, which raised his rank in life, and depending on the professions of friendship, and promises which his new friend liberally made him, he thought proper at her death not only not to claim her grants for the present, to avoid breaking with him as he knew must be the consequence, but also to give up to him a particular gife, part of his own alienated inheritance, which he had received publickly from her, as a reward for his services, and trust to his honour for an equivalent return. But that return, when at length it was made, was as

far

fa

CC

hi

C

P

ti

fr

T

ces

ile

X-

gh

to

11-

yr

0-

to

nt

in he

7

he

10

et

is

f. is

rt

m

g

t-

ė,

15

is

at

is

far from being equivalent, as his promifes were from performance; nothing being more contrary to his intentions, than to enable him to support his claims to those grants, of which he had gotten notice, and judged from his own heart the reason of their being concealed. He continued therefore to feed him with promises, which led his vanity into expence, and encouraged him to embark in schemes that he had not a fund to execute, till he fell into distresses, to extricate himself from which he had recourse to means, that laid his life at the mercy of this his supposed friend.

There are some crimes, the confequences of which are fo dangerous, that no punishment can be too fevere to deter from them. One of the worst of these is imitating a man's fignature, with a delign to deceive. It perpetuates the violation of truth, undermines the fecurity of innocence, and breaks that confidence which is indiffenfibly necessary to carry on the concerns of life. But, though no circumftances can, in a legal fense, extenuate the heinoufness of this crime, there were fome in this particular instance, which would have deterred any other man from the profecution of it: it had been committed not with an intention of doing injuffice to him, or any other, but to remedy for a time his injuffice by raifing apparently the value of the return he had made for the gift of their common

ferved, nearer to an equality with it, in order to procure present relief from distress, of which he had been, in so many senses, the cause.

PI

tu

PI

hi

u

to

0

h

tl

C

tl

Ju

d

But all these considerations were of no weight with him, when put in competition with the conveniency of getting rid of one whom he doubly hated, for being privy to his iniquities, and interfering with his interest. He hesitated not a moment therefore to make use of an opportunity, offer'd beyond his hopes, and sacrifice him, under the specious appearance of paying obedience to the laws.

In this it was necessary for him to act with the deepest cissimulation to accomplish his defign, in its full extent. But this was no difficulty to him. He professed pity for his misfortunes; and, while he corrupted all, in whom the wretch placed confidence, to betray him, managed fo as to feem to be compelled by law to appear against him, though he might with the greatest ease have avoided it, and buried the whole in filence. Nor did he stop here! his malice seemed to purfue him even beyond the grave; for instead of permitting him to prepare in peace for the approach of fate, he buoyed him up with hopes of a pardon, to earn which the deluded victim subscribed to every thing dictated to him to blacken his own character, and make void the grants, which he had purchased common

purchased at so dear a rate; and in this infatuation he was kept to the last moment, to prevent his recanting; for which purpose, his nearest friends, and all who might have undeceived him, and administered comfort to his distress in the hour of anguish, were barred a mittance to him.

But his eyes were opened on the verge of life, and in that aweful moment when truth only is spoken, he revoked every thing he had been thus drawn in to say, and afferted the validity of the claims, which were the cause of his ruin, so that the whole scheme, laboured with such deep damnation to deceive the world, was deseated.

I see the horrour with which you are affected at such a scene; and shall therefore close it with observing, that though he was permitted to perpetrate his crimes, divine justice prevented his reaping the fruits he proposed from them; as, beside the immediate price of his blood, it cost him more, than he earned by this complicated guilt, to stop the cries of the widow, and orphan, and bribe venal defamation to silence, when it was too late, and the mystery of his wickedness was made known to the world.

ower to which the confidence o

Page Julian to root ask told belief no say

cvil, but he known how to have wied is to

s,

ie

0

n

C

0

e

S

3

亚南亚市亚市西南南部 近亚市西南南市市市

CHAP. IV.

Continued. A view of his political character introduces a maxim not sufficiently attended to. He fails in a great stroke, and makes fo many wrong ones, that he is kicked out of power, and forced to be content with profit, which he pursues through thick and thin. An unhappy event gives him an opportunity of shewing his ingratitude to his late Patron, on the merit of which he raises to higher power than ever, which he wisely exerts behind the curtain, and leaves HIS TOOLS to hear the blame. An account of the just fruits of so much success concludes his story.

Private life. I'll now give you a glimple of his political character, which will convince you of a truth, for obvious reasons not sufficiently attended to, which is, that the ruling principles of the heart influence the actions in all capacities; and therefore that it is impossible for a bad man to be a good minifter.

The power to which the confidence of his Patron raised him was such as might have enabled him to effect either much good, or evil, had he known how to have used it to

the

th

be

tr

ne

po

tin

PI

-Ce

CI

fr

in

VX

W

of

gi

of

of

the best advantage. But his eagerness in the pursuit of his own views put him off his usual guard, and discovered his principles before it was too late to oppose them.

The most exalted minds are not exempted from human weaknesses. That of his Patron was a thirst of power, though without a thought of using it, in any improper manner. Some late fervices, of the highest importance, which he had performed to the flate, fuggefted to our hero a scheme for riverting his interest with him still stronger, by procuring him a power which he knew would center really in himself. Accordingly he exerted all his abilities and influence to wreft from the Sovereign an effential part of the incommunicable power of the crown, and vest it in him.

Such an attempt inftantly gave the alarm to every real friend, not only of the government, but also of him, in whose favour it was professed to be made; who, though they harbour'd no fear of him, did not dare to offer fuch an affront to their Sovereign, and give a wound to the political constitution of their country which might be of most dangerous confequence in lefs fafe hands. The defign therefore was defeated; and inflead of ferving his Patron, only instilled doubts of him into those, who were not acquainted with the uprightness of his hearts Though

Though the interest of his Patron continued to support him for a considerable time after this, his whole conduct was such a series of blunders, (many of them fo grofs, that it was doing violence to probability to impute them to ignorance) that at length the voice of the people was raised against bim, and he was obliged to give up all pretentions to power, and fit down with an employment of great, but meer profit, which all his own follicitations, though urged with the abject importunity of a common beggar, even to fhedding tears, and imploring compassion for his wife and family, all he had hitherto acquired having been fquandered, as fast as it came, on his pleasures, would not have procured for him, had not his Patron fanguinely espoused his interest, even to the injury of his own, though on a discovery of his principles and private character, now too notorious to be concealed, he rejected him from his esteem, and refused to give any farther countenance to his ambition.

From this time he applied every power of his foul to amass wealth, which he had too many opportunities of doing in his present employment, the most iniquitous of which he never failed to improve to still greater iniquity, regardless of publick reproach, and the distress of myriads, suffering under his injustice, whose cries and imprecations ascended hourly to heaven against him.

Riches

th Ti

of du gor alw affe dec loft estal was of c rect grat there unde and tude prov preffi vanta of ap

of ap the fe Confi he di

mach

Vo

Riches give consequence, especially with those who sacrifice every thing to luxury. Though he had no publick power, his personal influence over individuals in a short time became greater than ever, as he too soon

had an opportunity of proving.

Ó

r

>

.

-

of

1-

i-

m

er

of

00

nt

ch

er

nd

nis

d-

nes

One of those events, which shew the vanity of all human deligns, however wifely conducted, and glorious in their end, threw the government into other hands. New men always adopt new measures, if only from an affectation of appearing wifer than their predecessors. In this change his late Patron loft all influence, except that which virtue establishes in the bearts of the virtuous. This was an opportunity for shaking off the weight of obligation not to be missed by one of our Hero's turn. He not only deferted him directly in the basest manner, but also, to ingratiate himfelf with the prefent powers, fathered upon him the fictions of his own brain under the appearance of betraying his secrets, and made a merit of aggravating his ingratitude and perfidy by open infules, in hope of provoking him to some unguarded act or expression of resentment, which might give advantage against him, by the common trick of applying to the master what is meant to the fervant. But for once all his art failed. Confident in conscious innocence and merit, he disdained to give weight to such base machinations by taking notice of them; and VOL. VI. receiv.

receiving this ingratitude as a punishment for having placed his effect fo unworthily, looked down upon him with indignant contempt, nor was ever heard to honour his name with utterance.

Such a proof of his fincerity gained our Mero the confidence of his new friends, to whose tottering power his personal interest was found a necessary support. But he lent not that support but on his own terms. Cooled by experience, he had learned that the name of power is always pursued by envy and ambition. He therefore wisely gratified the vanity of others with the dangerous standow, while he reserved the substance to himself, dictating in safety, because in secret, all the measures for any mistake in which they were answerable.

In this situation you see him now. But such a series of success has been far from procuring him the happiness proposed in the pursuit. Recollection of the means imbitters the end. The ingratitude and persidy of one, whom he had placed his whole considered in, and bound to him by the highest obligations, upbraid him continually with his own baseness to his Patron, and make him afraid to place trust in any other; so that he lives in a state of constant suspicion and dread of all mankind, destitute of that friendly considence, which is the cement of society, the comfort and support of life.

Nor

Da

Ve

pun

app

thro

com

Dou

Tor

had

fion

are n

them

them

shall

fome

light.

Nor is this the only wound that rankles in his breast the unhappy victim of his avarice, murdered under the formalities of law, is never absent from his thoughts a moment. Conjured up by conscience, his spectre haunts his dreams. He sees him in the dark. He bears him in the deepest silence. Nor can the loud laugh of mirth and not drown his louder voice in the midst of company. Hence that gloom which you see hang upon his brow; that consciousness of guilt, which gives a cast of horrour to his very smiles.

Consider now the story of this man; and own with reverence and awe that vice never wants an avenger; that wickedness is its own punishment. Who would not rather be the apparent wretch, that wanders homeless through the world, sed by the cold hand of common charity, than he, with all his ho-

pours, power, and wealth?

9

t,

ey

at

0-

he

it-

911-

eft

his

he

read

ety,

Nor

The characters of the rest, except him who had been my master's competitor for admission into the superiour order of the society, are not distinguished by any thing to make them worth displaying; I shall therefore leave them in the obscurity they deserve; as I shall reserve his for another place, where some new occurrences will shew it in a stronger light.

CHAP. V.

CHRYSAL leaves the convent. His master proceeds in character. He practises a new manner of courtship; and signalizes his talents for intrigue, by debauching the daughter of his friend. Her distress, when too late, gives him some slight qualms of conscience; but he soon recovers, and goes on in his enterprize.

It was my fortune to leave this place, in the possession of the same person, who had brought me to it. The moment the meeting broke up, he slew to reduce into practice some part of the theory, which had been so well discussed among them. A person of distinguished learning and virtue, who had taken great pains, though to little purpose, with some part of the education of his youth, had observed of late, that he seemed to pay him particular respect, and was more frequent than usual in his visits at his house, where he behaved with a moral decency, very different from his general character.

The good man faw this with real pleasure, and attributing it to the influence of his own conversation, as vanity will find its way into the best hearts, gave him all the encourage-

ment

fe

W

fo

ga

ho

lo

kir

fro

ple

def

ac

as

his

bey

and

ment he could to come, in hope of working a thorough reformation in him. But he was deceived in that hope; and found, when too late, that he had cherished a viper in his bo-

fom, to fting his heart.

0

e

0

d

-

0

r-

is

d

re

e,

ry

e,

vn

to

e-

nt

Eusebius (that was this person's name) had an only daughter, on whose education he had exerted the tenderest care. She was now in that dangerous time of life, when ripened youth has given all the passions their full force, and reason not yet acquired strength to rule them. This danger though seemed less threatening to her, than it is to most of the sex, nature, which had been most liberal to her mind, having denied those charms of sace which too often prove a snare to the possessor; and the precepts of her father trained her in such principles of wisdom, and virtue, as seemed a sufficient guard.

Such circumstances, exclusive of the obligations of honour not to infringe the laws of hospitality, (I add not virtue, for that has long lost all obligation in matters of this kind) would have prevented any other man from thinking of attempting her; but the pleasure of seducing innocence supplied every defect of beauty; and the difficulty of such a conquest doubled his ardour in the pursuit; as the triumph would establish the same of his gallantry, which had never yet aspired beyond a servant wench; beside that the age and profession of her father secured him from

C 3

the

デステデステススススススススススススススススス

CHAP. V.

CHRYSAL leaves the convent. His master proceeds in character. He practises a new manner of courtship; and signalizes his talents for intrigue, by debauching the daughter of his friend. Her distress, when too late, gives him some slight qualms of conscience; but he soon recovers, and goes on in his enterprize.

The possession of the same person, who had brought me to it. The moment the meeting broke up, he slew to reduce into practice some part of the theory, which had been so well discussed among them. A person of distinguished learning and virtue, who had taken great pains, though to little purpose, with some part of the education of his youth, had observed of late, that he seemed to pay him particular respect, and was more frequent than usual in his visits at his house, where he behaved with a moral decency, very different from his general character.

The good man faw this with real pleasure, and attributing it to the influence of his own conversation, as vanity will find its way into the best hearts, gave him all the encourage-

ment

le

w

ga

ho

lo

ki

fro

ple

ac

as I

his

bey

and

ment he could to come, in hope of working a thorough reformation in him. But he was deceived in that hope; and found, when too late, that he had cherished a viper in his bo-

fom, to fling his heart.

0

e

0

d

-

0

r-

is

ed

re e,

ry

wn

to

e-

nt

Eusebius (that was this person's name) had an only daughter, on whose education he had exerted the tenderest care. She was now in that dangerous time of life, when ripened youth has given all the passions their full force, and reason not yet acquired strength to rule them. This danger though seemed less threatening to her, than it is to most of the sex, nature, which had been most liberal to her mind, having denied those charms of sace which too often prove a snare to the possession; and the precepts of her father trained her in such principles of wisdom, and virtue, as seemed a sufficient guard.

Such circumstances, exclusive of the obligations of honour not to infringe the laws of hospitality, (I add not virtue, for that has long lost all obligation in matters of this kind) would have prevented any other man from thinking of attempting her; but the pleasure of seducing innocence supplied every defect of beauty; and the difficulty of such a conquest doubled his ardour in the pursuit; as the triumph would establish the same of his gallantry, which had never yet aspired beyond a servant wench; beside that the age and profession of her father secured him from

C 3

the danger of personal resentment. Encouraged by all these equally powerful motives, the moment he saw her, he marked her out for the proof of his talents for intrigue; how to begin his attack though, so as to elude her father's vigilance, without

l

- 1

G

b

C

fu

en

ex

fir

th

in

W

alarming her virtue was the question.

But he was not long at a loss. Difficulties, which appear unfurmountable to wifdom, are easily conquered by cunning (and with this he was plentifully stored) because it will make use of means, which the other holds in abhorrence. In pursuance therefore of a plan, which he foon formed, he cultivated the acquaintance of Eusebius with the greatest affiduity, and in all his vifits to his house, turned his conversation entirely upon points of speculative knowledge, in which he professed the most earnest desire of informarion. Eusebius took the bait. As these were the usual topicks of discourse between him and his daughter, he was pleased at her being prefent, whenever my mafter was with him, both for her information, and to give her an opportunity of displaying the advantages she had received from his care; for which purpose he often led her, and my master into arguments, to which he listened with the highest delight, as she always had the better in them. Nor was she less pleased on fuch occasions, than her father. The modest deference, which my master constantly. paid the

paid to her judgment, was fo flattering to her consciousness of superiority, that she soon became fond of his company; at the same time, that the artfulness of his address to her, for he never shewed any other notice of her fex, than by a most guarded delicacy in his expressions, deceived the watchful care of Eusebius so effectually, that he never scrupled to leave his two pupils (as he fondly affected to call them) alone together, when any business demanded his attendance elsewhere.

As this was what my mafter had all along aimed at, it may be supposed he did not neglect to improve opportunities to favourable to his wishes. He always turned his converfation directly to fuch subjects, as were most likely to inflame the passions, on the gratification of which he expatiated with a particular warmth and luxuriancy of imagination, but in terms fo well wraped up, as to conceal the poison, they conveyed. The effect foon answered his design. Subjects, proposed meerly as points of speculation, gave her no alarm. And when such thoughts are once fuggested, nature will lead them to het own ends. Her passions had been smothered, not extinguished; and were the readier to take fire, for such restraint. She heard him, therefore, with pleasure, and flid infensibly into danger, the direct mention of which would have fruck her with horrour. vava og tes mode Cique asw fra Matters

Matters were in this critical fituation, when he returned from the fociety. The moment he alighted, he flew to the house of Eufebius, who unhappily was not at home. The conversation soon fell into its late course. There are fome moments, in which nature will bear down all opposition. Though she had indulged herself in talking on such subjects, the meant nothing more. But he was too well versed in the practice to let her stop at the theory; and one unguarded minute murdered the peace of her future life, and blasted the fruits of all her father's care.

It is impossible to describe what she felt, when passion gave place to reason, and she became sensible of what had passed. Even he, hacknied as he was in the ways of wickedness, could not stand it. He left her precipitately, and for the first time felt something like remorfe. But these qualms lasted not long. His defires were rather raifed than satisfied; beside that to have stoped here, without making his fuccess publick, would have disappointed perhaps the principal pleafure he had in view. He resolved therefore to seduce her from her father's house, that all the world might be witheffes of his triumph.

For this purpose he went to her the next morning, at a time when he knew Eufebius was usually engaged abroad. On enquiring for her, he was answered that the was not well; and was turning about to go away,

when

tha

ma

Sh

clo

dif

fac

tha

foo

feel

when her maid, who from her own experience had suspected something of the cause of her mistress's illness, officiously ran to him, and told him she was in her dressing-room.



CHAP. VI.

Continued. Chrysal's master makes his triumph publick, by seducing his new mistress away from her father's house. The manner in which he imposed upon them both to effect this; with the consolation he gave her for some natural consequences of his gallantry. His triumph is compleated by her going upon the town, and her father's breaking his heart.

n

d

d

e

t

15

g

ot

n

It intimacy in the family giving him a title to visit her there, he went directly up, where he found her in a condition, that once more shook his resolution, and made him almost forry for what he had done. She sat the image of despair! sleep had never closed her eyes! she had not changed the disordered dress of the day before; and her face was so swollen with incessant weeping, that he could hardly believe it was she.

Her maid withdrawing conveniently, as foon as he entered, he threw himself at her feet in all the trick of woe, and imploring

C 5

her pardon, lamented what had paffed (for which he imprecated heaven's vengeance on his own head) in such passionate terms, as amid all her grief, alarmed her fear of his being overheard, for hitherto the fecret was their own.

The first hint of this cured him of his penitence, and fuggefted to him how to pro-He perfifted in all the extravagance of grief; and acted his part fo well, that forgetting her own diffress for a moment, she was infentibly led to administer consolation to him. This was what he wanted! he at length feemed to be comforted by her arguments, which he gradually improved fo far as to glance at a continuance of the guilty commerce, which he preffed for by the most rapturous professions of love, and the strongest vows of unalterable constancy and truth.

This was an attack, which the was no way prepared for! her heart was foftened by grief; and shame for what was past precluded her arguments against a repetition. She hefitated however, filenced not convinced, till the voice of her father turned the scale. "O! " fave me from his fight!" (exclaimed fhe, wringing her hands) " fave me from his fight! 11 go to death, to any thing rather than

fo

46

46

" meet his eye."

" Nor shall you meet it," (answered my mafter clasping her in his arms, and kiffing away the tears, that trickled down her cheek) " I'A

" I'll go this instant; and take him home with me as upon business, where I'll find means to detain him, while you pack up " fome immediate necessaries, and prepare to meet my faithful valet de chambre, who " shall wait with a coach at the end of the " next street, and conduct you to my cours " try-house, whither I'll follow you on the " the wings of love, and drown every dif-" agreeable thought in rapture."

He did not give her time to answer, but rushed directly out of the room, and meeting her ready maid at the door, took his cue from her, who told him the had excused her mistres's absence from supper the night before, on a pretence of her being engaged in

t

-

0

1-

ne

11

1

e,

t!

an

14

ng

k)

.horz

reading, as the faid in the morning, that the had fat up to late, the could not rife to breakfast,

Satisfied with these excuses, because he suspected nothing else, Eusebius, on hearing my mafter was above, was coming up to pay his compliments to him, when he met him at the bottom of the stairs. " I must give " up arguing with one," (faid my mafter smiling as he went forward into the parlour, whither he knew Eusebius would necessarily attend him) " who fits up studying all night. " She has turned me out, on a pretence of " dreffing; but I know it is to go back to " the book at which I caught her; so that " I shall make but a poor figure in the even-

"ing if you don't help me out. However,

" I'll try! I am not ashamed to yield to her! but come! I called so early to beg your company at my house, where I have fomething that will please you to consult you upon. I shan't keep you long, as I am obliged to go out before dinner."

To this Eusebius readily affented; and my master putting his hand under his arm, led him away, proud of fuch familiarity with a person of his rank, as unsuspecting as a victim to the altar. As foon as he got home, he gave the necessary instructions to his trusty Valet de Chambre, and then returning to Eufebius, amufed him with imaginary schemes of reformation and economy in his family, and improvements in his house, till the return of his emissary let him know all was over. He then dismissed Eusebius with a fmile of triumph, who went home, happy in his mind at the prudence and virtue of his conversation, the effects as he fondly imagined of his own care and example; the last time his mind ever knew happiness.

The moment he was gone, my master hasted after the deluded fugitive, whom he overtook just as she alighted at his house, the servants of which were too well accustomed to such things, to be surprized at the sight of a new face. The manner of their meeting may be easily conceived. On his side all was joy, and triumph; on her's guilty confusion, shame, and sear. However, repeti-

tion,

cri co far

flection fatilities fa

fion

. I

myi hear Eufe ter, him not after The port This agair in w

befor

tion, though the highest aggravation of a crime, is yet less terrifying than the first commission; beside she had now gone too

far, to flop at any thing.

Three days he staid with her, every moment of which was imbittered to her by reflection, and seemed tedious to him from satiety and impatience to make his triumph known; and then lest her on a pretence of business, with vows of immediate return, and going back to London, repaired directly to the tavern, where he had by letter appointed to meet all his associates, to whom he related the whole affair in such terms of exultation, as raised their envy, not so much at his possession of her, as the glory of such a triumph.

I fee your anxiety to know the fate of the unhappy Eusebius, and his more unhappy daughter. Though I faw them no more myself, I had too many opportunities of hearing their story, the fum of which is this. Eusebius, on his return home from my master, found a note from his daughter, bidding him farewel forever, and defiring he would not take the trouble of making any enquiry after her, as the was un worthy of his care. The diffraction evident in the style, and purport of this note, too plainly shewed her ruin. This was an attack his heart was not proof against. He funk down instantly in a swoon. in which he escaped some hours of misery, before he recovered his fenfes.

The first exertion of his reason was to make enquiry after his daughter, but no one could give him any information, her maid who conducted having accompanied her flight. He then flew to his friend, my master, for council and affiftance; for the goodness of his own heart would neither let him suspect him, nor defert her in the ruin, into which fhe had fallen; but he was told at his house, that a certain Nobleman of his acquaintance had called upon him, the moment he left him, and taken him into the country for a few days. Every enquiry he could make after his daughter was equally unfuccefsful, till my mafter's exultation made the whole affair publick. This, if possible, gave fresh poignancy to his grief. He did not however defert the wretched victim of such villainy, but wrote to her directly to return to him, and hide her shame from the world in his bosom; but despair made her reject his offer, you mon smort anger and no printed

As for her, a few days, in which my master left her to the comfort of her own resections, discovered to her that his love had been injurious to her health, as well as to her peace of mind. What she felt at this discovery may easily be conceived. She wrote to him in the agony of her soul, to repreach such manifold baseness; but instead of an answer of excuse or consolation, received only a quack doctor's advertisement, and a bank-

note

T

SI

pr

del

th

H

an

WI

gri

his

note for a trifling fum, enclosed in a blank cover. The same post brought her her father's offer of forgiveness and reception. The contrast was more than the could bear. She hurried back to town, where defpair prompting her to revenge her folly on herfelf by still deeper ruin, the plunged into all the horrors of a life of common profitution.

This filled the measure of her father's woe. He had no redrefs to expect in this world; and therefore religning the punishment of his wrongs to the great Avenger, indulged his grief in filence, till in a few months it brought his grey hairs to the grave.

CHAR. VII.

"CHRYSAL's master pays his court to a great " person, who seems not much to relish his bu-" mour, and expresses some unfast onable feuti-" ments concerning polite pleasures. In the " course of a regular progression CHRYSAL " comes into the possession of a Beau." Hiftory of a Beau, with a journal of his manner of life for one day. CHRYSAL changes bis service, in a common way, for that of A LADY OF FASHION.

HE next morning after my mafter's return to Landon, he went to

" pay his court to the Heir of the Crown, " who was then at one of his country-feats. " Some publick occasion had brought a con-" course more than usual, in those retire-" ments, to pay their duty to the Prince, " that morning. As my mafter was one of " the last who came, as soon as his devoirs " were ended, some of the company acci-" dentally asked him what had kept him so " late; on which, with an easy air of plea-" fantry he answered aloud, that he had been " detained by a very whimfical affair :" " A " certain nobleman" (faid he) "went into " company last night, so immensely drunk, that " having fat down to play, and loft five "thousand pound, he quite forgot it this " morning, and refused to pay the money, " till some person of bonour, who was un-" concerned in the matter, should vouch his " having loft it fairly; on which it was re-" fered to me, and forry I am that I was " qualified to give it against him." " How, my Lord! by being a person of

ec [

.66 1

" T

66 7

with

er li

cc t

se fi

... 0

se is

c6 ex

66. VI

21 eq

ec .co

-11366

46 as

" fe

« a

er B

" jet

cc wa

STREE

"How, my Lord! by being a person of honour!" (says the Gentleman he spoke to.)—

"No!" (replied my master, with a significant smile) "not so neither! but by being "unconcerned in winning it."—And then turning short to another, "But have you heard the news, my Lord?" (said he) "Mr.—caught his wife yesterday, taking a serious walk in Kensington-gardens, with

" the gentleman whom we all know he for-" bad her keeping company with, some time

" ago."greet meted at cime, who may

" A smile of general approbation encou-" raged him fo much, that he concluded

" with faying, he wished he had himself " been the happy delinquent so taken, as he

" doubted not but the gravest bishop on

" the bench would, were he to speak his

" mind honeftly."

"The Prince had heard him without inter-" ruption; but as foon as he had ended, turn-

ing to a nobleman who flood near him,

"There can be no greater infult" (faid he, with a determined look, and folemn accent)

" to a person, who is appointed to put the

" the laws of a country in execution, than

" for any one to boast of a breach of those

" laws in his presence. For my part, if I am

ever called by Providence to that station, it

" is my invariable resolution, that no man, boto

" exalted foever in rank, who lives in open

" violation of any law, buman or divine, shall

ever bold employment under me, or receive

" countenance from me."

"This rebuke damped my master's spirits, " as it struck a reverential awe into all pre-

" fent. He hung down his head; and in

" a few minutes withdrew quite abash'd.

"But he foon recovered; and to filence the

" jests of his companions, and shew that he

" was not to be brow-beaten out of his own STREET,

Way.

way, he made one with them to spend " the evening at a brothel tavern, where he

" gave me to a pimp, who gave me to a " whore, who gave me to a bully, who gave

" me to a pawn-broker, who gave me to a

beau." Vol. 2.—Page 98.—*

My new master was one of those cyphers in nature, who feem born only to make up the number of mankind. The poor pittance, which pride of family spares from the eldeft fon to fave the rest from starving, had been just enough to purchase him a commisfion in the guards, in which he fignalized his prowefs on the parade, and talked as big, and looked as bluff as the best, while his campaigns were confined to St. James's Park. But the prospect of a war changed his note. The irregularities, and licentiousness of a military life now shock'd his delicacy, and he exchanged for half-pay; and recaining only the convenient title of captain, resolved to push his fortune in the gentler way of matrimony.

For this purpose he directly commenced beau, as the fair fex is foonest caught by the eye, and when that is pleased, seldom enquires farther. Accordingly he now studied nothing but fallions, as all his care was to

" a few mounts withdrew quite aball d.

procure-

the i diffic ed n Nor expe that to pi

proc

It came ance. body to fil is to officer ther, to w tindi cordi him : able an o ladies he ha of hi as thi fion. appea dient

pullin pany

come

As this conclusion of the foregoing character is so fort, it is inserted to preserve the connection, and save the rea-

procure cloaths to keep up to them, which the narrowness of his circumstances made so difficult for him to do, that his belly mourned many a time for the finery of his back. Nor was that his only difficulty. The very expence of going into company to display that finery was often as diffresting to him as to procure it. A assessment to somethod in land

It was on an occasion of this kind, that I came into his possession. His shewy appearance, together with his being one whom every body knew, making him a convenient fagget to fill up those multers, the only end of which is to flew the confequence of the commanding officer, by the numbers she can croud together, there was hardly a genteel route in town, to which he was not invited. Such a diftinction was the height of his ambition; aceordingly having received a card to fummon him to one the next evening, he was not able to refift the temptation of fo favourable an opportunity of flowing himfelf to the ladies, though his finances were fo low, that he had no other way to defray the expence of his chair, but by applying to fuch a place as this, where diffres is preyed upon by profesfrom, and really aggravased under the deceitful appearance of momentary relief; an experdient indeed to which he was well accustomed. As foon as it was dark, therefore, he come wraped up in a horse-man's coat; and pulling a laced-waltoost out of his botom, mortgaged YEEG

mortgaged it for three guineas, one of which I was.

When this weighty transaction was concluded, he returned home, and changing his dress repaired to a coffee-house at the courtend of the town, where he talked over the news of the day with all the significant airs and importance of one in the secret, confirming every word he said with the authority of bis cousin, this lord, or bis friend, that duke, till he carelessy out-stay'd all bis engagements for supper, when a Welsh rabbit, and three-penny worth of punch made him amends for the want of a dinner, and he went home satisfied.

Well as I was by this time acquainted with the inconfistencies of human life, I could not help being struck with the contradiction between the external appearance, and domeftick ceconomy of my new master. The former was in all the elegance of tafte and affluence, while the latter was regulated by the ftricteft parcimony that nature could fupport. He lodged in an house, which opened into a genteel street, and had a back door into a blind ally, that served him whenever he chose to go out, or come in incog. Here one room up three pair of stairs (but the name of the ftreer over-ballanced that, and every other inconvenience) ferved him for every purpose of life, in most of which he ministered to himself, undisturbed by the company

pan drei To peo fage But

fcril was day

A whe he f till : brea thic fee thing till i wen orde late for a to fe it w wher ment this real bruff fire t then

wash

were

pany of any one, but his hair-dresser, laundress, and taylor, at their appointed times. To all others he was constantly denied by the people of the house, who received all messages for him, and returned proper answers. But the manner of his life will be best described by the history of the one day, I was in his possession, the business of every day being invariably the same.

As he had fat up late, it was near noon when he arose, by which genteel indulgence he faved coals, for his fire was never lighted till after he was up. He then fallied out to breakfast in a tarnish'd laced frock, and his thick foled shoes, read the papers in the coffee house (too soon after breakfast to take any thing) and then walked a turn in the Park, till it was time to dress for dinner, when he went home, and finding his stomach out of order from bis last night's debauch, and his late breakfasting, he sent the maid of the house for a bason of pea-soop from the cook's shop to fettle it, by the time he had taken which, it was too late for him to think of going any where to dine, though be had several appointments with people of the first fashion. When this frugal meal was over, he fer about the real business of the day. He took out, and brushed his best cloaths, set his shirt to the fire to air, put on his stockings and shoes, and then fitting down to his toilet, on which his washes, paints, tooth-powders, and lip-salves

were all placed in order, had just finished his face, when his hair-dresser came, one hour under whose hands compleated him a first rate beau.

chi

luc

xie

his

mo

low

W/9

X

Hift

- 6

a

b

a

1 24

end

ing

thro

When he had contemplated himself for some time with pride of heart, and practised his looks and gestures at the glass, a chair was called, which carried him to a scene of equal magnificence and confusion. From the brilliant appearance of the company, and the ease, and self-complacency in all their looks, it should have seemed that there was not one poor or unhappy person among them. But the case of my master had convinced me what little faith is to be given to appearances; as I also sound upon a nearer view, that many of the gayest there were in no better a condition than he.

Having reconneitred one another fufficiently to lay in a fund for remarks, and bandied about the common cant of compliments, the company fat down to cards, when the looks of many of them foon underwent a change. For prudential reasons my master always declined engaging in patties of this nature, but this night all his address could not excuse him. A lady, whom he had dreffed at for a confiderable time happening to come late unluckily wanted one, and fleing him idle would take no apology. He complied therefore with the best grace he could, and invoking fortune with more fervency than he had 9 3 77

had ever prayed to heaven, cut in; when chancing to fall against her, her superiour luck, or skill, aided not a little by his anxiety, soon stripped him of every shilling in his pocket, and sent him home in a pensive mood, to study ways and means for raising another supply; and on this occasion I followed the smiles of fortune, and entered into the service of the winner.

naviliatevenion prevention her making a new

the room, with view A P. A. P. WHLIW , soon on

History of Chryshl's new mistress. She is brought into distress by her heauty, from which a lucky interview relieves her. The danger of arguing in favour of inclination against reason. Her friend puts her to school to learn manners, and afterwards marries her. His family shew impotent resentment, at which he is so enraged that he makes his will, by which he leaves her his whole fortune; and then dies. An uncommon instance of the good nature of the world.

HOUGH my late mafter had put the best face he could upon the matter, and excused his breaking up the party at the end of the first rubber, on a pretence of being taken suddenly sick, my mistress saw through him. "Sick indeed!" (said she, laughing)

laughing) "hah! hah! hah! poor captain!" I do not doubt but you are, and that at "heart! I faw it coming upon you, ever

" fince the first deal, when I beld four by

" bonours! but I don't wonder at it. A full rubber was too much. Two guineas

and an half are no trifle to some peo-

"Esple!" was bee semented to so inthe and sovie!

(aping)

Two or three other visits, which she had to pay that evening preventing her making a new party, she only staid to tell the story of the captain's sickness to every one she knew in the room, who all joined in the laugh against him.

I see you are shocked at such an instance of insensibility; but if you will reslect a moment, you will find you have no reason. Though poverty is attended with many real evils, yet when the worst of them are voluntarily encountered to gratify vanity, the pity, otherwise due to it, is justly turned into contempt; and the efforts used to hide it, which are always seen through, treated with ridicule and insult.

The morning after I came into the possession of my new mistress, she brought to conclusion an affair of a most extraordinary nature, which sew women beside herself would have had spirit even to undertake. To explain it properly to you, it will be necessary to give you a short sketch of her story.

The

he form ad the the wa

rui

ti

go they of t mar The into pove part: any c only fuppo the le inspire Such : an age dreffed what a

her, w

The gifts of nature are either a bleffing, or a curse, according to the use made of them. My mistress was born in one of the lowest classes of mankind; the obscurity of her birth though seemed to be made amends for, by the endowments of her person and mind, which were such as raised universal admiration, from their first infant dawn. But these, tempting the licentious spoiler, like the beauty of a flower growing in the highway, lost their advantage, and proved her

ruin, for want of proper care.

She had scarce passed her childhood, when one of those female purveyers for vice, who go about like their mafter, feeking whom they may destroy, to the disgrace not only of their own fex, but also of human nature. marked her out as proper for her purpose. There was no difficulty, either in getting her into her power, or feducing her mind. The poverty of her parents made them glad to part with her, without farther enquiry, to any one who promifed to take care of her, only to be delivered from the expence of her fupport, as it had prevented their giving her the least education to form her manners, or inspire her mind with principles of virtue. Such a subject was exactly fuited for so vile an agent to work upon. She took her home; dreffed her up decently, and teathing her what account to give of herfelf, proftituted her, while she could make any profit of her, VOL. IV. and

and then turned her adrift upon the world to live as well as the could, on the earning of

fin and wretchedness.

I must not attempt to describe the life of a common profiture! it is too horrible! The had ran through the lowest scenes of it for some time, when fortune one night threw into her way, one of those old debilitated debauchees, who indulge in the speculation after they are past the practice of vice. Something in her air and manner, as the picked bim up, ftruck him. He took her to a tavern, where he was fell more pleased with her uncommon fmartness and vivacity. " I am "cloyed" (faid he, to himfelf) " with the groß ignerance of the women of the town! 1. I have the impertinent airs of virtue, which those of better education give themselves! " I'll therefore unite those qualifications, which separately please me in both, in this " young creature, who can never offend me by pretences to virtue, at the fame time s that the excellence of her understanding will receive, and reward me with the fruits of, the best education."

There was novelty in the whim; and therefore he resolved to carry it into execution. He took her home with him, and sending for the most eminent masters in every part of polite education, put her under their care, and incited their application by most

liberal promifes of rewards

Young

at

1 f

" t

"a

"th

.. he

" fo

" ad

" H

wi wi

"ag

of of

Young as fhe was, and hackneyed in every vicious habit, the had a fufficient lenfe of the change in her way of life, not to forfeit the advantage by any milbehaviour or neglect. On the contrary, she applied herself so closely. to every thing taught her, and shewed a difposition so desirous of improvement in every, sense, that her benefactor, proud of the difcernment, which could discover such talents, under so great disadvantages, became enamoured of the effects of his own benevolence and care. "I have at length found" (would he fay to himfelf) " what I have hi-" therto fought in vain, a woman that can " make me happy! Her wit and understand-" ing will enliven the hour of heaviness; " while a false parade of virtue will never "throw a damp on pleasantry and mirth. " What though her birth is obscure! are " we not all descended from one common " flock? is the blood of a pealant less pure, " than that of a prince?—If she has taken " a falfe step, in the weakhess of her youth, " that should be charged to fate that led " her into temptation, before she had rea-" fon to relift it !- But all these seeming dif-" advantages are now turned in her favour. " Her experience in the ways of the world will make it impossible to deceive her " again. Her consciousness of the meanness of her own family will give her a pro-" per fense of the honour of being admit-D 2

" ed into mine; and save me from the intolerable plague of having her pedigree,

" rung in my ears every hour. Her youth

" fupply to our children the defects which

" too eager a pursuit of pleasure may have made in mine. Let those who are de-

pendent on the world, regard its censure;

I am above it, and will purfue my own

" happiness wherever it leads me."

There is nothing more dangerous, than feeking for arguments in favour of inclination against reason. Trifles, light as air, will be admitted as the weightiest proofs of that which is wished to be proved; and palliatives, barely possible, answer objections in their nature unanswerable. He had taken a liking to her! he had taken it into his head to fecure the gratification of that liking, by marrying her; and a very little arguing with himself in this manner soon convinced him. not only of the expediency of fuch a marriage to his happiness; but also of the obligation he was under of doing that justice to her merit, and his own judgment. consequence may be easily concluded. married her, as he professed in obedience to reason, rather than to gratify inclination.

But the case was very different with the world, which, far from seeing the force of his arguments, laughed at him for being taken thus in a snare of his own making.

His

ti

20

W

na di

W

th

ad

CO

w

ou

His own family in particular beheld her with eyes perhaps not less blinded by interest, than his were by inclination; and depreciating the merit she really hid, represented his marriage as the mere effect of vicious do-

tage.

Nothing is so ill judged as to shew impotent resentment. It only provokes a return of none effect; and makes a wound incurable which otherwise might have healed of itself. Incensed that they should presume to censure actions, which they could not controul, he directly made his will, by which he gave away the inheritance of his ancestors from his own blood, leaving his whole fortune to his wife, as a testimony of his unaltered regard for her, and to shew his resentment to them; soon after which he died.

This was more than her most sanguine hopes could ever have risen to. She was in the prime of life; and possessed of a fortune to afford her all its pleasures. These advantages (and I should add her beauty, which was in the perfection of ripened bloom) naturally attracted a number of admirers of different kinds, and with as different views, who all thought themselves sure of her, from the circumstances of her past life. Needy adventurers (such as my late master) paid court to her fortune, in the matrimonal way; while her beauty attracted the more dangerous address of those, who meant no more

 D_3

than

m

than pleasure. But she was guarded against both. She had tasted something of the sweets of virtuous reputation, and knew the value of it too well to forfeit it entirely again by compliance with the latter; and her pride and experience set her above all the schemes of the former.

She lived thus for some time in the highest happiness, of which she had any idea, for she was a stranger to that false delicacy, which creates itself imaginary uneasinesses, and palls the enjoyment of present pleasures. She was admitted into good company, where her behaviour, if not absolutely approved of, was still received with good natured allowances, as much better than might have been expected from the circumstances of her life; and she herself treated with tenderness to encourage her to perseverance, in so uncommon an amendment. But this happiness was too great to last long undisturbed.

advincences that I Mount add be he here, with which was received to start the start to and bloom not write at a number of lattering of different trades, and with as different very of who all thought thresholves three of her from the curtism farmes or her mad hie. Wester all ventures of her mad hie. Wester all ventures of her mad hie. Wester all ventures of her mad hie.

ous address of thois, who means no more

evan, is to man in the ni ename in C H AP.

tune to afford her all its

to the thirty of the contraction of the contraction

CHAP. IX.

The common consequence of over-doing things. Her busband's relations find out a flaw in bis will. The comfort of baving good lawyers to keep up a client's spirits. For the advantage of baving two firings to ber bow, she enters into an engagement of marriage, under an beavy penalty. The event of ber law suit shews the prudence of this precoution. She is cast; ber lover flies off, and She fues bim for the penalty of his engagement. He begs the money among his friends, and then by a nice fineffe plays ber own game back upon ber, and flings ber off with balf. CHRYSAL changes bis fervice.

T daily happens, that men defeat their own intentions, by carrying them too far, Hurried away by his passions, her husband, in making his will, had exceeded the power vested in him by the law, and so by striving to give her more than he had a right, really gave her much less. But it was a considerable time, before his family recovered fufficiently from the aftonishment and confusion with which such a stroke overwhelmed them. to perceive this, and be able to purfue proper measures for taking advantage of it. D 4 The

philbing

The first notice my mistress received of this affair, was by an offer they made her to refer their claim to private decision, in order to avoid the expence and trouble of a lawfuit. But though the former part of her life had impressed her with horrour at the very name of the law, she would not listen to such a proposal, without taking proper advice, the

jı

W

ne

fo

m

w

Ь

ba

fh

ab

dr

de

he

fea

tin

his

and

nel

ma

refult of which may be eafily judged.

Lawyers will never lose a good client for want of giving hopes. Her's perswaded her so fully of the justice of her cause, and gave her such positive assurance of success, that she resolved to spare no expence to obtain it. Though right and wrong are so essentially different from each other, they yet are sometimes involved in such intricacies, by the industry of those, whose profession it is to distinguish between them, that it is difficult to know which is which. It was so in this case. They had raised such clouds, that reason could not see through them; and so every one was lest to speak according to inclination.

While matters were in this fituation, one of her admirers thought it a proper time to push his fortune with her. His rank, and expectations in life raised him above the necessity of such a scheme; but avarice will stoop to any thing; and he would gladly have taken her, with all her faults, for the sake of her fortune, the certainty of her establishing

blishing her right to which he had taken care to be well assured of by sages learned in the law, before he laid siege to her. This however he was far from avowing. He pleaded the most disinterested love, and pressed for a

return with all the ardency of defire.

But though she could not do so much injustice to her charms, as to doubt their power of inspiring such a passion, she positively refused to listen to any proposals of marriage, till her law-suit should be decided, from a generous fear of involving him in inconveniences, which her lawyers positively assured her could never happen; as he with equal generosity, founded on the like assurances, offered to marry her, while it was still depending; whereas the truth of the matter was with both, that be thought be could make a better bargain, as she knew she must a worse, if it should be concluded, till every thing was absolutely settled.

They had played this game upon each other for some time, when a diffident word dropped by one of her lawyers, as the day of decision drew near, determined her to change her system, and make sure of something for fear of the worst. Accordingly, the next time her lover visited her, on his repeating his professions of the violence of his passion, and offering as a proof of its disinterestedness to enter into a mutual engagement of marriage, as soon as the suit should be end-

ed one way or other, under the penalty of a large fum of money on the refuser, the let herself be overcome by such an instance of sincerity, and taking him at his word, signed

the engagement directly.

The event justified this caution; for after all the assurances of success, by which she had been led on by her lawyers to run into every expence they could devise, justice appeared so strongly in favour of her opponents, that she was cast; and a considerable part of the estate of her husband adjudged to return directly to his family; and

the rest after her death.

Though what remained to her was more than sufficient to support her in the genteelest manner, she could not but feel at first a fall from so high hopes; but her spirit had been too well exercised in the beginning of her life, to yield long to any thing ; and the had almost got the better of it, when fomething that piqued her refentment, roufed her effectually. Among all the friends, who came on this occasion to gratify the insalence of condoling ber missortune, the was not. a little furprized never to fee the face of her lover. As the could not be at a loss for the mean motive of fuch behaviour, she might possibly have treated it with the contempt it deserved, had not necessity urged her to shew a warmer resentment.

The,

pe

ra

up

and

mo

to her

mo

The expences of her law-fuit had involved her in debts (for she never lowered her living, depending on the affurances given her of fuccess) which were now demanded with an importunity that perplexed her. This was just at the time when she took notice of the defertion of her lover. The urgency of her creditors therefore fuggested it to her, to call upon him to fulfil his engagement of marriage, which his conduct convinced her he would forfeit the penalty rather than do. by which means the should punish him for his rashness, and extricate herself from her difficulties at the same time; for had she thought that he would fulfil it, there was nothing the would not have fuffered fooner than link her fate to him.

There is something in a woman's calling upon a man to marry her, so contrary to those notions of delicacy, on which the superiour class of the semale sex value themselves, that perhaps no other woman of her rank could have prevailed upon herself to do it. But she had not been born in, nor bred up with expectations of that rank; her notions therefore were of a courser complexion; and though she had learned the external modes of behaviour, the trick of complaisance, she had been put to school too late in life, to change her sentiments so far as to make her think it necessary to sacrifice so powerful motives as resentment and interest, to a de-

D 6

licacy

licacy that appeared to her meerly phantaftick.

The moment, therefore, the thought occured, she applied once more to her lawyer; and by his advice wrote a letter to her lover, in which she directly claimed the performance of his engagement. But as this was no more than his heart told him he must expect, (for he would have done the very fame thing himfelf) he was prepared how to answer her. Accordingly he wrote to her in the most artful manner, excusing his not baving been to wait upon her, since the fatal decision of ber law-suit, on account of the pain be must feel at seeing ber, when he had lost all bopes of ever calling her his; for as her generosity would not permit ber to marry, while ibere was only a possibility of such a misfortune, be could not suppose, that her sense of bonour and justice would now, when it had actually bappened; and for this reason be desired that the would please to send him his engagement, not that it was of any consequence, as he would return ber's, to whom he wished the bigbest bappiness in every scene, and view of life.-Such a refusal was just what she wanted! she ther fore instantly commenced a fuit at law with him to recover the penalty of his engagement, which he had thus forfeited to her.

The care he had taken himself, to make the engagement as binding as possible, precluding

cluding every hope of defeating her claim; and his knowledge of her temper convincing him that it would be in vain to attempt prevailing on her to drop it, now she had once begun, he had recourse to an expedient to extricate him from this difficulty, of the fame mean kind with that which brought it upon him. Accordingly, though he was well enough able to pay the penalty himself, as he did not chuse to fulfil his engagement by marrying, he put on a poor face, and went begging to all his relations for their affiftance, pleading poverty, and alledging the disgrace it would bring upon the whole fa-mily if he should be obliged to marry such a woman, whom he represented in the blackeft colours, exaggerating every circumstance of her life. Though this might juftly have been retorted upon himself, for ever thinking of her, they took pity on his diffres, and raised the money for him, by a general contribution.

Such success encouraged him to hope for further, and try the force of his eloquence upon my mistress. For this purpose he desired an interview, which she had with much reluctance consented to give him, the next morning after I came into her possession.

I had seen vice and folly in a variety of shapes, but never did the human heart appear to me in so contemptible a light, as his upon this occasion. He begun his attack with

flattere,

flattery, professing the highest respect, and lamenting in the most passionate terms, that the difficulty of his circumstances would not permit him to have the happiness of marrying her, and appealed to her generofity, and justice, as before for a release from an engagement, that it must be the ruin of them both to fulfil. But all was in vain. She fearce deigned to make him any answer; and that only to sell him, that his professions and arguments were equally ineffectual to alter a resolution, which the baseness of his behaviour alone had made her take. Not quite discouraged tho' by such a repulse, he instantly changed his method of application. He threw himself at her feet, implored her compassion on his poverty, and offered, as the utmost it would permit him to do, to pay her down half the penalty directly, concluding with faying that if the refused to accept of that, he had no other resource, but e'en to fulfil his engagement and marry her.

This was fighting the devil at his own weapons. The mention of marriage was a stroke she was not prepared for. Startled at the thought, therefore, as she knew not what despair might drive him to, she agreed to his proposal, and so they divided the money between them (for he prudently pocketed the other half himself, as he could not think of offering such an affront to his friends as

equal gainers by a bargain, in which each out-witted the other.

Though what my mistress got fell short of her expectation, it answered the double end of granisying her resentment, and paying her debts, on the latter of which occasions, I left her service.

CHAP. X.

CHRYSAL makes some out-of-the-way remarks on matrimony. Description and history of his new master. Chrysal vindicates his using a common expression. His master's first rise from a beggar to a foot hoy. He gains his master's favour, of which he makes the use natural to be expected from his sirst education. Some account of a relation of his principal's. The danger of giving advice. Chrysal's master instructes himself into the Colonel's liking, and undermines his principal, in his regard.

I HAVE observed in the course of this account of my last mistress, that you have been shocked at the thought of a man's marrying a woman in her circumstances. To you, who view life only by the light of reason, it must certainly appear most unaccount

countable; but better acquaintance with the ways of the world would reconcile you to that, and many other things equally gross

and shocking in speculation.

Marriage is a mutual trust of honour. A man's marrying a woman therefore who has loft her honour, is trufting his whole fortune to a bankrupt, who has no fecurity to give for that trust; a fool-hardiness that must proceed either from a consciousness of having himself no honour to lose, a total disregard to the lofs, or an affectation of acting on different principles from the rest of mankind, as a proof of being above their prejudices. Where her honour indeed has been loft to himself, justice makes it a duty upon him to repair her loss by marriage; but then that very marriage is a punishment for his crime, as it must want the essential happiness of confidence; for he will always be ready to fufpect, that the disposition which betrayed her into errour with him, may have the same effect with others. Nor is this suspicion unnatural.

I see you would argue from the habitual, avowed incontinence of man, that this trust of honour is not equal, and therefore cannot be obliging. But this is judging without duely considering the subject. Chastity is in its nature, a virtue equally the duty of both sexes to observe, and with regard to society in general, the violation of it is equally crimi-

nal

n

ir

C

al

er

th

tu

16

is

ce

he

in

ac

th

tw

pe

pa

ch

wi

me

ed

of

tat

aw

lat

ten

op

nal in both; but in those nearer connections of life, the interest of which is the more immediate object of human attention, the consequences of that violation in woman are attended with fo much greater inconveniences than in man, that in respect to them, the crime is obviously less pardonable in her, than in him; and for this reason, this virtue of chastity is made in a peculiar manner, the bonour of woman; while the bonour of man is placed in other virtues, from which she receives as much advantage, as he does from her chaftity; and therefore the trust of honour is mutual and equal .- In diftinguishing thus between bonour and virtue, I speak according to the notions of mankind; in their own nature, there is no distinction between them.

There was fomething in the whole appearance of the person to whom my mistress paid me away, that made me expect to fee a character of a cast, which I had not yet met. with among mankind. His looks were fly, methodical and plodding. Practice had fixed upon his passive face the hollow varnish of a fervile smile; and an over-acted affectation of polite behaviour made his natural awkardness truely ridiculous. But under all this, I could see a depth of design, and a latitude of principle equal to any great attempt, the fuccels of which should in the opinion of the world determine the quality Same of

of that greatness, whether villainy, or vir-

That knowledge of his life, which is necessary to explain his character, and account for the principles upon which he acted confistently his manifold part, will be comprized in a few words. Sprung from the dregs of the people, and turned loose upon the world to shift for himself, as soon as he was able to crawl, he took his stand about the house of a person in business, where he hardly earned a morsel of broken victuals by running of errands, cleaning shoes, and such other offices, as are performed by those servents of servants.

I fee you wonder at my faying he was sprung from the dregs of the people, as if difference of rank could make any alteration in the effential equality of human nature; but without entering into a discussion of undetermined points, on both sides of which much has been said with equal strength of reason, the best observation of the power of early example to impress those principles, which are to govern the suture life, will sufficiently justify my using the expression here.

1

1

d

n

h

W

y

C

th

h

th

The patience, with which he was obliged to bear the cuffs and kicks of those worst of tyrants, who always wantenly revenge tenfold upon their wretched underlings, whatever they suffer themselves, taught him that hypocrify, and abject submission, to every thing

thing that might any way serve his convenience, which afterwards proved the groundwork of his fortune; as the example of his parents, who got their living by retailing to the poor the meanest necessaries of life, initiated him so early into every species of low fraud and chicane, that they became absolutely natural to him, and invariably ruled the conduct of his life.

He had been some time in this hopeful course of education, when an accident opened him an opportunity of shewing what a progress he had made in it. A brother of the person, about whose house he picked up the feraps that kept him alive, happening to fee one of the fervants beating him unmercifully, interfered from mere humanity, and faved him. The marks he bore of his beating raised a curiofity to know how he hall deferved it; when he gave so seemingly innocent, and pitiable an account of himself, and attributed the fervant's cruelty so artfully to his having refused to do something for him, which was improper for him to do, that the young gentleman believed him, and taking compassion on his distress, admitted him into the family to wait upon himfelf, by which he was delivered from his dependance on the other fervants, and protected from their future infults.

a

i

¥

3034

The humility, with which he behaved himfelf, in this first step of his advancement, his affiduity, and seeming attachment to his master soon won his good opinion so far, that he dispensed with his attendance, and sent him to school, where he applied himself so closely, and made such a proficiency, that his master took him into his own business, in which his sobriety, diligence, and obedient temper gained his considence so entirely, that as soon as ever he thought him capable, he admitted him into fellowship with himself, and absolutely resigned the management of

his whole business to him.

It may naturally be supposed, that he did not neglect to improve fuch an opportunity of practifing the leffons he had learned in his youth. He fecreted the profits of all the business, which his principal was not indifpenfibly obliged to be personally engaged in; he supplanted him with such as he could of his customers; he cheated of considerable fums of money fuch others, as long experience of his (the principal's) honesty had put off their guard with him; and took every occasion of infinuating to the world, under the most effectual disguise of friendly concern, and complaint, his negligence, and incapacity; at the same time, that he professed to himfelf the most implicite respect and obedience, and feemed ambitious of flewing his gratitude and attachment by performing the fame fervile offices, which had been his first occupation about him.

But

h

to

0

ju

0

hi

W

PI

of

tr

CO

to

pe

pr

But all this was trifling in comparison with the stroke he made against him, in his own family. There was a near relation of his principal's, who was indebted to his friendly affistance, for the first step of his rife to the rank of a colonel in the army. Nature had been lavish to him, in the endowments of mind and body; but pride marred the bleffing, and turned them all to his disadvantage. Confidence in the external graces of his perfon made him neglect the improvement of his understanding, while an affectation of fingularity, which is always affumed as a mask to hide real ignorance, made him fet his own opinion in opposition to the established judgement of mankind.

As the conduct of such a man must necessarily be irregular, his relation and friend, my master's principal, exerted the authority of those characters, and frequently reproved him in the sincerity and well-meaning of his heart. The notion that this liberty, which when properly taken is the highest proof of regard, was assumed on the score of obligation, gave offence to the captious haughtiness of the colones's temper, and estranged an esteem, which it ought to have

confirmed.

This was an opportunity for my master to display his talents. He studied the temper of the colonel, and paid court to his caprices. He cringed to his haughtiness, bore his

70 CHRYSAL: Or, the

his infults, and ministred to his vices, with an implicite submission to his superiour sense and judgement, which he received as the only

standard of right and wrong.

The contrast between this complaisance, and the superiority, which the colonel thought his relation assumed by giving him advice, insensibly transfered to my master that regard, which his principal lost. As this was what he had all along aimed at, he omitted nothing to widen the breach by infinuations, so artfully conveyed as to aggravate the offence, taken by the colonel, and yet if repeated would bear a sense directly opposite, and seem to spring entirely from friendly concern, should a reconciliation between them bring his practices to light. But an event, that he could not scheme for, removed every such apprehension, and rivetted his influence beyond his most sanguine hopes.

stream and the motion of the manifest

when when proceed relicalisation and

emploses du describe sem deser la siche empresa est es conside sons consectes de

the comment and the galactic considers of

syndicating of dama are the or tripper

out of the billion of the first the few.

 de sid on kalonsking her. Decam son hiv vie word groundsking auf en begann sid et sen hy

The war yell was a c. H.A.P.

ref

the

fir

Ce

TI

va

his he

on

216

ストをあるがれるようか。 本はある

CHAP. XI.

Further account of the COLONEL. CHRYsal's master, in conjunction with a semale
associate proper for his purpose, compleats his
scheme of alienating the COLONEL's regard
from his samily, of which he gives a proof
of a most extraordinary nature. A remark
able instance of CHRYSAL's master's talents
for a particular kind of wit, with a striking account of the worthy manner in which
he and his sair associate acquitted themselves
of the trust reposed in them by the CoLONEL:

Colonel prided himself in an opinion, that there was no woman whose virtue could resist his addresses. This self-conceit, which the frailty of the lower class of semales had first given rise to, was confirmed by his success with one, whose fortune and education should have secured her against his attacks. The glory of such a conquest satisfied his vanity; and the pleasure of having her on his own terms so endeared her to him, that he thought not of any other. One thing only gave him concern about her; which was, in whose care he should leave her, when the

the field.

But in this he was not long at a loss. The humble, implicite attachment of my master pointed him out as the person, in every respect most proper for such a trust. To him, therefore, he committed her at his departure, hugging himself in the happiness of having

fuch a mistress, and such a friend.

The nature of this trust necessarily brought on an intimacy between my master, and his charge. Intimacies between the sexes are dangerous in any circumstances; but in their's, where she could not even make pretence to that virtue, which could be her only guard, the consequence is obvious. From this time, they joined their interests, and laid their heads together to estrange him from his own family, particularly my master's principal, who in case of death had the first claim, from law and nature, to his fortune.

In carrying on this scheme, they played into each other's hands with such address at his return, that when he was going to the next campaign, he made a will, by which he gave, not only his own large acquisitions, but also the inheritance of his ancestors between them, in such a manner as plainly shewed a wrong mind, and supported his bequest with such reasons, as were an insult to the laws and religion of his country; at the same time, that they perpetuated the insamy

of

t

u

ec

-10

25

la

in

be

W

of

ed

pr

to

en

th

66-

ch

ter

of those, to whom it was made, by arguing expressy in favour of the vices, which had gained them this mark of his regard; and this will, the substance of which satisfied them for the circumstances, he left in the hands of my master.

In this fituation matters stood between the three, when I came into his possession. When he had finished the drudgery of the day, he went as usual to spend his evening agreeably

with his charge.

0

e

t

S

0

r

n

d

e

h

-

y

0.

e

of

There was one species of what is called wit, upon his expertness in which my master valued himself not a little. This was telling a sictitious story with so grave a face, and corroborating it with such plausible circumstances as to raise the hearer's anxiety, and then to laugh at the easy faith that could be so taken in. Low as the merit of such wit was, at the best, in him it had none at all. His sictions were no better than downright lies, destitute of imagination, or humour, and corroborated with nothing but new coined oaths and imprecations, sit to afford entertainment only to the damned.

With an essay of this kind he resolved to entertain his mistress this evening. Exerting therefore all his command of countenance, "My dearest love," (said he with a melancholy look, and deep-drawn sigh, as he entered the room) "I have received bad news,

Vol. IV. E E HI Dien ac blaft

" blast my eyes! there has been a battle, in which our fool"—

"Has not been killed!" (interrupted she, fnatching the word out of his mouth,) "that is bad news indeed; but another battle may afford better."—

I see you were struck with horrour at my repeating the imprecation he made use of on this occasion. Instead therefore of intermixing them with every period of his discourse, as he always does, I will in their place make a pause thus, ———, which will serve as well, for he uses them in general, as no more than meer expletives.

No!" (answered he, shrugging up his shoulders,) "that chance is lost forever—.

- "He has received a wound —, which without endangering his life, has disabled
- "him from further service, so that we shall
- " be bleft with his company -, for the

" rest of our lives."

"Cursed, you should say! But is there no way to be thought of, to prevent it?

" Could not proper application be made to

the furgeons?"

"All is too late! his leg was taken off directly ---; and the danger entirely over,

when the account came away; as you may see by his letter, in which he writes

" me word —, that he hopes to be at

"home with us, in a month, to leave us

on more. Eh! what have I done with his letter? — It should be in this pocket!

" I cer-

n

at

y

y

n

X-

e,

ke.

as

re

1'5

-.

ch

ed

all

he

no

t?

to

off

er,

ou

ites

at

us

ith

et! er-

"I certainly have left it behind me, in my " confusion -. But you'll see it soon enough. " He fends his love to you; and bids me tell you, he would have wrote to you, but was prevented by company, fo that " you see he cannot be in any danger ----. " But he'll make you amends. I fee how every thing will be ---. He'll marry you, as foon as he returns -; that he " may introduce you into his family, who " will treat you with forced civility, in order " to get him into their hands again. I fee " very well - how every thing will hap-" pen." No! that fhall never happen! I hate

" themselves, and despise their civility.

" had rather bear the speers and infults of

" the world than that. Nor will I marry " him, let what will be my fate! his info-

" lent, capricious humour is scarce to be

" borne now; though he curbs it, because

" I am at my liberty to leave him. What

" would it then be, were I to be his flave

" for life? I had rather feign penitence, and

" throw myself on the compassion of my

" own family, than plunge into fuch mifery.

" Marriage on any terms is a state I despise,

" but with him I abjure it."

This passion was such a triumph to my mafter, that he could keep his countenance no longer. "Hah! hah! hah! a fair bum-" bug, damn me!" (faid he, bursting out

E 2 into into an horse-laugh) " your humble servant, " madam! I thought you could not be taken " in. Hah! hah! hah! a fair bumbug, " damn me."

" Taken in!" (faid she, vexed at being played upon, but more pleased that it was no worse) " how can you take delight in " fuch a low-liv'd trick? If I could not shew my wit, in a better manner, I am fure I " would give up all pretentions to it."

" All pure spite and malice! But don't " fret for it. Come! we'll kiss and friends. " and think no more of the matter! only

" remember not to brag another time that " you cannot be taken in though! hah! hah!

se hah !"

o manifest of

Every thing being thus made up, their conversation for the rest of the evening was fuch as may be supposed between persons of their cast, and in their situation. They gloried in the fuccess of their schemes upon their common dupe, the colonel; they formed plans for spending his fortune, should any lucky accident put an end to his life; they ridiculed the pride and felf-fufficiency of which they had taken advantage; and concluded in their usual way, with proving in each other's arms, the justness of his confidence in their fidelity.

t,

n

ıs

n

W

I

t

y

t

!

r

S

f

r

MSO 28

CHAP. XII.

CHRYSAL's master receives an account of the death of the Colonel. He finds after much deliberation that he cannot sling his worthy associate out of the whole spoil, and therefore prudently resolves to share it with her by a marriage, of which he draws a comfortable picture. He urges his suit, and she strives to evade it by arguments consistent with both their characters. He carries his point, in a particular manner.

But all this harmony was soon disturbed for ever, by the accomplishment of the very schemes it was founded on, which was much nearer than they imagined. The first news my master received on his return home next morning, was that the colonel had been killed in a late battle. This was an interesting event! he directly locked him elf up in his closet, and taking out the will, though he had often read it before, studied every syllable of it over and over to try if there was any possibility for him to sling his own and the colonel's common mistress, and get the whole fortune himself; but he had the mortification to find that this exceeded

all his fagacity, and that the whole will must

stand or fall together.

After some, not the most pleasing, meditation therefore, " And fo !" (faid he, biting his nether lip, and turning up his eyes, with an execuation, too horrid to be repeated) "I " have been labouring all this while to get " a fortune for this brimftone! A very pretty " reward truely, for supplanting my best " benefactor ! it were better for me, that " even he had it, than she; for then I might " not only enjoy my share of it as it goes, " along with him; but also very probably " cheat him out of most of it, in the end. " What though I am to have it after her " death! may not she live as long as I? " Beside, I have made away with the greatest " part of the money, and fo am liable to " be blown up and undone, whenever she " thinks proper to call it in; for I know " too much of her, to expect that the should " fhew favour to any one, when once in " her power. No! that shall never be! I " have it in my power to fet aside the whole " unnatural, nonfenfical will, and I will do it, if the refuses to come into terms with me. Such a facrifice of my own interest to gratitude and honesty, as this will of appear, will gain me fo great reputation, et that I shall make a better fortune myself, in a little time; and as to what I have embezzled, I know by experience, that I

ean fink that upon my wife principal at a or proper time, as I have done more before now; fo that after all I may find honefty to be the best policy, as the siying is. " Well! be that as it will, I am refolved to " be honest to myself first, and do that " which shall serve my own interest best, " without regard to proverb, or opinion. " Let me consider then! suppose I marry " her; and so get possession of all at once. " But the devil of it is, that I must take " her into the bargain; and I know her too " well for that, if I could help it. She " may most likely serve me the same trick, " with some body else, that she has served " this fool with me; once a wbore, and al-" ways a whore. However, I must take my " chance for that. Cunning as fhe is, fhe " shall not cuckold me easily. If I am not " a match for her, the must be able to our-" wit the devil himself; so happy come " lucky, I'll e'en venture." Having reasoned himself into this prudent

resolution, he would lose no time; but went to her directly to carry it into execution. As soon as he met her, "I have brought you "news now (said he) in earnest. News, "that will be either good, or bad, accord-

" ing as you take it." and and be

ľ

t

y

t

it

t

"Piha!" (answered she slightingly) this
is more of your wit, I suppose. But for
heaven's sake leave off making a fool of
E 4 "your-

" yourfelf, and teazing me. I am quite fick " of fuch fluff." avan has a too tooge "

..

66 35

66 66

. 66

..

.. 66

33

66

.

46

46 1

" Strike me to the center," (replied he paffionately) "but I am ferious. I have this " moment received an account, that the co-" lonel is actually dead. He was killed in

" the late battle."

The look, with which he faid this, had more weight with her, than all the oaths and imprecations he could utter; for much as he was master of his countenance, he could not conceal the agitation of his mind. " Dead !" (interrupted she, eagerly) " thank heaven! "then all my fears are over."

Aye!" (replied he dryly) "but it is " well if your hopes are not also over with "tathem !"im Exterviewoll store to trans "

"How? What do you mean? Has he " not made a will, by which all his fortune " comes directly to me? For heaven's fake

do not torture me in this manner." "Yes! he has made a will, it is true. "But don't you know that the last letter I " received from him revoked it, fo that " every thing goes now to his family, for he " lived not long enough to make another, " after he received his wound; though that is no great loss to you, for from what he " faid when he was dying, it would not

"have been much in your favour."

"But did you not promise me, that you " would suppress that revocation, in case -itioy

" any thing of this kind should happen; " which you faid you had it in your power " to do, as your principal was fool enough " to promise you, that he would never open " any letters, that should come directed to " you from the army, as he had a right to " do, by which means it had luckily escaped coming to his knowledge."

"Perhaps I may have faid fo! but do " you think I have no more conscience, than " to conceal fuch a thing; and rob a man " to whom I am under fo great obliga-" tions ?"

"Conscience! For heaven's sake, I conjure " you again, do not torture me any longer. " Speak of conscience to those who do not

" know you. I have had fufficient proof, " that your interest is your conscience; and

" this will furely determine you to ferve me,

" as you ferve yourfelf at the fame time. " Is not all to come to you at my death?"

"But what am I to do, in the mean " while? Come then! as you fay you know

" me fo well, I'll offer you a fair proposal, " that shall make it my present interest, (for

" that is what I regard) to ferve you; and

" your future interest, on which you lay fo " great a stress, to serve me. Suppole, we

" join our interests in all things, and marry. " By this expedient I shall come directly into

" the enjoyment of the fortune; and your

" children will inherit it."

I

E 5 "Marry !"

" Marry !" (exclaimed the, starting in furprize) " what could put fuch a strange " thought into your head, who know my " fentiments on that unnatural state of su-" perstition and slavery? No! that of all " things, I can never come into. But, I " fee your are at your bumbugging again. "The professions, and oaths of friendship, " you have so often made me"-"Were all but wind," (answered he) "and " have left no trace behind them. But this " kind of talking answers no end. " whole depends on the one word, by which " you answer me this short question, "Will " you marry me? Or will you not?" If you " confent, I will fecrete the papers, that fet " aside the will, and so we shall share the " fortune between us. If you refuse, I will " give them up to his family, who will directly defeat your claim, and then you " may follow for your living that libertine way of life, you appear so fond of; for "I have no notion of damning my charac-" ter in this world, and my foul in the next, to serve any other but myself. Consider " therefore before you speak, as I will go " directly from you to them if you refuse " me."

Such a menace was not ineffectual to one who knew him fo well. "Will nothing else " fatisfy you?" (replied she, bursting into tears) " No part of the fortune; and to con-

" tinue

..

66

66

66

46

66

no

46

66

46

ci

46

451

bef

figi

"tinue as we are at present, man and wise in every thing but the cursed ceremony?"

"No! that ceremony is the very thing I want, and nothing else; because that only can give me a right to your fortune; for as to your person, I would not have you think I set any value on that! I have long fince had enough of it: and for sharing the fortune, I am resolved I will have all, or none; and this is the reason, why I make you such an offer; for otherwise, I assure you I hate marriage, as much as you possibly can. So let me have your answer directly, for I will not triste thus a moment longer."

The manner in which he faid this left her no room to doubt his resolution. "Well

" then," (replied she sighing) " if you will

" have it so, it must be so; and I consent

" because I cannot help it. But when is this bleffed marriage to be solemnized?"

"As for that, I am in no more hurry

" than you. All I defire is that you will

" directly fign a promise of marriage, when-

" ever I think proper to call upon you. I'll go this inftant, and draw it up; and leave

" you to confider how much better this is for

us both, than to have disagreed, and let

" all go to his family."

e

1

u.

C

e

1

e

,

0

He waited not for a reply; nor was long before he returned with the deed, which the figned with evident reluctance.

E 6

CHAP.

THE WAR ARE WE DIESCOL, WAR LOOK WILE

CHAP. XIII.

Account of the methods, which CHRYSAL's master took to obviate the effects of his principal's refentment, with the characteristick conversation that possed between them, on the former's avowing the Colonel's will. CHRY-SAL's master over-shoots his mark, and provokes his trincipal to do more than he ever intended. An uncommon instance of the justice of the world. CHRYSAL's master chiges the lady to court him in her turn, and at length marries her. The consequences of such a marriage, and sruits of the success of all their schemes.

The H I S point being settled, the next thing was to produce the colonel's will, the thought of doing which gave him some alarm in spite of all his fortitude, as it would be throwing off the mask he had worn all his life, and declaring war with his Principal, who he judged from himself, would not fail to publish to the world the meanness of his original, and the misery from which his compassion had raised him.

might be, could not divert him from his purpole. To disable his Principal though as far as A A II D a d possible

3

P

th

m

w

ne

an

la

hi

die

th

th

M

CO

pe

be

de

m

tie

2

a

tri

66

46

44

46

64

..

WO

" OUS

possible from carrying his resentment any farther than words, he ransacked all his papers, and took away not only such as related immediately to the private transactions between themselves, but also those of other people, with whom they had been concerned in business, in order to distress his circumstances, and involve him in such perplexities as should lay him under a necessity of keeping fair with him. But this precaution, like many others dictated by the same spirit, occasioned the very

thing it was designed to prevent.

-

r

The first news of the affair was like a thunder-clap to the family of the colinel. My mafter's Principal, though, who in the course of law and nature, had the first expectations, as I have faid before, could not believe it to be true, so high was his confidence in the honesty and attachment of my master. To satisfy however the importunities of his family, he came to him, and with a look of indignation at the baseness of such a report, rather than apprehension of the truth of it, " I am come (faid he) to tell " you a piece of news, I have just this mo-" ment heard, which is that the colonel has " left his whole fortune between that jade, " his mistres, and you; and that you were or privy to his will, which he left in your " hands when he was going abroad. But " the latter part of the story makes me eafy " about the rest; for whatever his caprici" ous temper might lead him to do, I am convinced you would have no hand in fo hase an affair, not even conceal his having

" base an affair, not even conceal his having

" fuch an intention from me a moment. I fee you are shocked at the scandalous im-

" putation; but do not think I mention it,

" as if I believed it. I could not do you fo

.

66

..

66

66

66

**

thi

rep

" much wrong."

The first impressions of youth can never be totally essaced. Though my master could lay schemes to cheat his Principal, and revile him behind his back, he had learned to look at him with an awe, when a beggar about his brother's house, and afterwards his servant, that he could never after get over, when in his presence. This awe, added to the confusion of conscious guilt, made him unable to make any answer for some moments, and had wrought that change in his countenance which the other took notice of.

As foon as he could collect spirits to speak, "I—I—I am obliged to every one, f—f—

"for their good opinion of me;" (said he, with his eyes fixed on the ground, and faultering at every word) "and hope I shall "not f—f—f—forseit it, by accepting the

" favours of my friends."

"How!" (interrupted the other eagerly)
what can you mean by that? You furely

" do not, cannot avow !---

"As for that; Sir!" (returned my master, plucking up a little more assurance) "what "I avow

"I avow or disavow is nothing to the pur"pose. I presume that my most dear and
"worthy friend, the colonel, had a right to
"leave his fortune to whom he pleased;
"and that whoever he has lest it to has also
"a right to take it, without being answer"able to your opinion, or that of any others,
"who may be prejudiced by you; for the
"world will judge better, and be satisfied
that he had sufficient reasons for what he
has done."

" And fo then! it is even fo!" (replied the other, after a long pause) " and this is the return I meet for railing you from " wretchedness, and admitting you to the first place in the esteem, and confidence of my heart. Cherish a vicer in your bosom, " and be will sting you to death. But it is beneath me to upbraid you! I leave the " revenge of my wrongs to your own con-" science, and the justice of heaven; and from this moment disclaim all intercourse " with you; nor shall my lips ever more " utter your name, if I can help it. The " fight of you is a pain to me! I will fend " a person to take my affairs out of your " hands, and defire you will directly provide " yourfelf another habitation! Unhappy for " me was the day, when I first gave shelter to your misery in mine."—Saying this he turned away without waiting for a reply, and left the room. This

eider

This infolent behaviour (for fo my mafter called it, as foon as the other was gone) was fuch an affront to bis bonour, as in his opinion cancelled all obligations, and justified every thing he had done, or could do against him. Giving vent to his refentment therefore in a burst of blasphemous execrations, he proceeded in the execution of his schemes, with this improvement, that to obviate the imputations of base dishonesty and ingratitude, which his own conscience to'd him, his Principal would publish to the world against him, he loaded him with every scandal, that his inventive malice could fuggeft. But instead of answering his purpose, produced the very contrary effect, as it put him under a necessity of laying open things to vindicate his own character, which indignant shame of having placed his confidence fo unworthily would otherwise have made him conceal; and in this instance the world was not dazzled by fuccefs, but directly paid his villainy with the infamy it deferved.

As for the lady, fashion made it necessary for her to put on all the mimickry of wee, in which she persisted most decently for the usual time, at the end of which she found her husband, that was to be, so stack in his addresses, that she was obliged to court him, as such an unsettled life was equally contrary to her interest and inclinations. This answered a double end. It gratisted his vanity,

disco longe affect delic

(for

feem

riage of, I cum could ever, most the com that tual, of h

quar mut and that com their pect

veng

the

T

ter

as

oi-

ed

ene

S,

ie i-

d

(for he took care to make it known) and feemed to obviate the credit of the contract between them, should it ever happen to be discovered. Accordingly he kept off a little longer; and at length consented with the affected irresolution of a man of the most delicate principles, and sense of honour.

As he only got a legal right by his marriage, to what he was already in possession of, he soon grew tired of the state, the circumstances of which in his particular case could not be very pleasing to any man. However, to avoid the evils of which he was most immediately as afraid, he went to live in the country, where he admitted his wife to see nobody, but those he approved, and in company with himself. Nor was he satisfied that his utmost vigilance could prove effectual, as he had had experience of the looseness of her principles, and her expertness in all the arts of intrigue.

Their lituation, in these circumstances, may be easily conceived. Continual suspicions, quarrels, and recriminations aggravated their mutual dislike to the most rancourous hatred, and made their lives such a scene of misery, that they themselves looked upon it as a commencement of heaven's vengeance on their crimes; while all who knew them expected in horrour that they wou'd make that vengeance still more signally dreadful, by

men glodarghyd of it dedw wreak-

wreaking their hatred upon each other's lives,

or their despair upon their own.

All the advantages, thus dearly earned, were an affluence disgusting for want of power of enjoyment, except in an external pomp that only mocked the misery within, and made the meanness it was designed to hide, the more remarkable.

CHAP. XIV.

CHRYSAL's master designs to set up a coach; but wants a material article, toward making a proper sigure with it. He consults with an Herald, who gives him an elaborate dissertation not the most pleasing to him, on coats of arms, and the modern methods of making them, in which he unfolds many curious mysteries, and undertakes at last, on proper encouragement, to make him a gentleman. Chrysal changes his service. Conversation between his new master, and an Antiqui and Antiqui are proves the genuineness and importance of certain relicks of antiquity. Chrysal changes his service.

In this age of delicacy and refinement the first thing thought of in genteel life is a carriage, which is so indispensibly necessary

no when matter and and perp

This cora

port bera with defe mo ing cen cou He dre wit lini tha flip ed giv Ore ble far

al

0

res,

ed.

of

nal

nn,

to

ng

an

if-

on

ds

ny

992

-

.

n

to procure respect, that no eminence in science, no practice of virtue is held in esteem, where that is wanted. Sensible of this, my master resolved to be speak one, the elegance and grandeur of which should prove his taste and magnificent spirit. One difficulty though perplexed him not a little in the design. This was his want of a coat of arms to decorate the outside of it, and display to the world his illustrious descent.

After much fruitless meditation on so important a subject, it occured to him, that an berald must be the proper person to consult with upon the best means of remedying this defect. Accordingly he enquired for the most eminent in that way, and on the morning fixed for his attendance, prepared to receive him in fuch a manner as he imagined could not fail to inspire him with respect. He was folling at breakfast in an elbow-chair; dreffed in a morning-gown of green damask, with a red cap on his head, the cambrick lining of which was edged with a rich lace, that turned up over it, and crimfon velvet flippers on his feet, one of which was extended on a cushion of the same materials, to give him the appearance of the gout, a diforder which he looked upon as an incontestible proof of his being fprung from a good family, while his lady poured out his tea, and between every dish read a paragraph in a news-paper to entertain him.

As foon as the berald was shewn in, my master cast an eye upon his lady, and nodding majestically toward the door, she withdrew, and left him to his business. After the usual questions about the weather, and the news, my master at length entered upon the subject. "I understand S—S—S—Sir," (said he, faultering, and almost blushing in spite of his assurance) "that you have great skill in heraldry; and therefore defired to see "you to consult about my c—c—c—coat of "arms."

ce b

" Z

er fl

46 V

46 a

. 60

coni

· 66 11

u a

ce t

46 F

** 0

es f

46 5

46 f

.. 9

.. 1

"

. .. 1

1 186

"

662

46

" arms." "I do presume, Sir," (answered the herald with an air of importance) " to have fome "knowledge, in that mysterious and sublime " science, and hope I shall not wrong the " character you have received of me, in any " thing, in which you are pleased to employ " me. Hem! ahem! Pray, Sir, what may be the nature of your present commands? I " suppose you want to introduce into your own coat, the bearing of some branch of " your family, which is fallen to you. There " is nothing in the world easier to be done, " that is by one, who, as I faid before, un-" derstands the science. It is only dividing "the field properly, and taking care that " the blazoning of the different quarterings, of " which all good families gain many in a " long course of descents, may not be wrong-" ly blended, as colour upon colour, or metal " ufon metal, which you must know is false " beraldry ;

ing

w,

WS,

ub-

aid

kill

fee

of

ald

me

me

ny

oy

ay

ur

of

ere

ne,

n-

ng

of

,2

le

1;

beraldry; though I beg pardon, your blaconing is most likely in precious stones, the
peculiar emblems of nobility with us. But
that makes no difference, as I will convince you, if you please to let me see your
arms."

"Sir," (replied my master, still more confounded by this jargon) "that is not what I want. I would have an entire "n-n-new coat."

" n-n- new coat."-"O! I understand you, Sir! you are " the first of your family; and want to make " arms for yourself, as none of your ances-" tors have left you any! Why, Sir, that too " may be done; but it must be with judge-" ment, and care, as I faid before, for fear " of interfering with the arms of any other " family. But you may trust me for that, " Sir! Half the arms you fee cut such a " figure about the town are of my deviling. "The king may make lords and knights of " whom be pleases, but it is the berald must " make them gentlemen; for what is any man " without a coat of arms? Pray, Sir, what " is your name? And of what profession " was your father?"

"Wh—wh— why do you ask, Sir? I sup"pose there cannot be any thing material
"to your purpose in them?"—

" Pardon me, good Sir, they are mate-" rial, very material. A name, especially " if it consists of many syllables, often gives

an

16

"

66

66

"

..

66

11

"

66 9

lear

bim

cafi

ney

66

he

66.

..

...

" an excellent hint; for much as your mo-"dern wits may affect to despise the mys-" terious learning of Rebus's, wifer antiquity " held it in high repute, as you must have " observed from the many illustrious coats " of arms taken entirely from the name: " and then knowledge of the profession of a " gentleman's father is absolutely necessary " for many reasons. There are professions " the implements of which are never drop'd, " because the professions themselves are rec-" koned honourable, as there also are others, " nothing relating to which is ever borne, " for the contrary reason. The son of a ge-" neral or an admiral, for instance, will have " his arms charged with implements of war; " but the son of a man who kept a chandler's " floop will never bear a lump of butter, or " a bunch of candles, nor the son of a tay-" lor, a pair of scissars or a thimble; for " these would at once betray what is design-" ed to be hid; and therefore it is absolutely " necessary that I should be informed of these " particulars."-

"B-b-b-but, Sir, can you not strike out something entirely now, without al"luding to any name, or profession at all?

"I am willing to pay you well for your

" trouble, only let me have fomething ele-

" gant and grand."

"I understand you, Sir. I'll engage to please you. I'll quarter you the coat of a "crown'd

10-

y.f-

ity

ive

ats

e:

f a

ary

ons

'd,

ec-

TS,

ne,

ge-

ave

T:

r's

or

ay-

for

gn-

ely

ele

ike

al-

11?

le-

to

n'd

" crown'd head in an instant, without any " body's being able to fay a word against it. " Leave it to me; and I'll engage to please " you; not the richest contractor or Nabeb " of them all shall make such a figure."-"And pray, Sir, what is your price, for a " job of this kind?" - "Price, Sir, I never " make bargains! let common mechanicks " do that! Gentlemen always make me a " prefent, when they befpeak their honours; " and according to the value of that, my " invention is either high or low. " Well, Sir, it shan't fink on that account " now. Here are ten guineas for you, as " an earnest of what I will give, if I like " your work, when it is done."-" Sir! you may depend on having the " big best arms of any man in the kingdom. "Your generolity shews that you ought to " be a gentleman; and it shall be my fault " if I don't make you one, in the fight of " the world." - Saying this, he took his leave, when I was heartily glad to go with bim, being part of the price paid upon this occasion for the making of a gentleman.

As foon as my new master went home, he retired to his closet, and taking out the money he had just received, "Hah! hah! hah! "no bad price for a little daubing!" (said he laughing, and chinking the purse.) "I wonder how the fellow could be such an "as as to think that any thing in my power to do could make him pass for a gentle-" man!

CC .W

44 C

ve fe

t. in

il. m

" jı

c y

" k

cc ri

46 th

cc V

ec m

cc .m

ec ito

cc fo

« ne

ce th

cc W

ec ec

" co

c til

ac th

" TI

u bi

as the

cc m

46 his

" m

se no

" fuc

ec the

" ag

man! But let him have his way! his folly is my gain; and it is no more than "justice, that one who has cheated the world " fo long, should cheat himself at last, and " facrifice the earnings of villainy to vanity! " But hold! this is about the time my Antiquarian was to come. Let me fee those ancient manuscripts, and inscriptions which " I had done last week! upon my life, they " look very well. The canker upon this " copper, and the smoke upon this parch-" ment are as natural as they were the work of a thousand years; and these scrawls " might pals even for the spells of the witch of Endor, they have so little likeness to " any marks made to convey thought, at this time. He is a very pretty fellow, "that did them, and deferves encourage. "ment." now test sweet, who then the Y

Just as he said this, the person he expected came, and entering without ceremony upon his business, "I called upon you, Sir, " (said he) to see those things you mentioned to me. If they are really what you describe, we shall not differ about the price,

si high as it is." him den in de noot iA

"I hope, Sir" (answered my master) "you have not so mean an opinion of my judgement, as to imagine I could ever think
of imposing upon you. No, Sir! I know
that to be impossible; even if I could be
base enough to attempt it; and therefore
"would

in

d

d

1

n-

se!

ch

ey

is

1-

rk

rls

ch

to

at

w,

e-

ą.

ny

ır,

n-

ou

e,

ou

e-

nk

W

be

re

ıld

" would not mention any thing to you, that " could admit of the least doubt to a per-" fon of your prof und learning. As to " the price, I could have had much more " fince I faw you; but I thought it but " justice to their merit to offer them first to " you, as there is no other collection in the " kingdom worthy of them, and I am above " rifing in a demand I have once made, " though infinitely short of their intrinsick " value, as you will be convinced, the mo-" ment you see them. Here, Sir, is the " manuscript, which I had the good fortune " to meet with as I was rummaging among " fome old records in our office, that had " never been stirred since the reign of Henry " the Eighth. The paper in which it was " wrapped was fo decayed, that it moulder-" ed quite way, so immediately upon its " coming into the open air, that I had scarce " time to read the contents, which were that " this parchment had been found in the tomb of "Thomas à Becket, upon the breaking up of " bis shrine at the reformation, and was laid up " there, on account of its antiquity. That it " must have been very ancient, even before " his time, the colour and decay of the parch-" ment would sufficiently prove, were there " not other proofs still more convincing to " fuch as have judgement to comprehend " them. The shape of the letter shews its " age. This manner of writing, as appears " by VOL. IV.

by comparing it with other anciest manu-4 scripts, was introduced in the beginning " of the fecond century of the Christian 4 Æra, and quite dropped by the middle of the third. Within that period therefore it must have been written. Its antiquity being thus fixed, the purport of it is next to be confidered; and of that, and 46 its importance, there can be no just room to doubt. This fpot at the bottom of "the parchment, though so much defaced by time, bears a strong resemblance to the " impression of a mitre, and thereby proves " that fome bishop was the author of what was written over it, into which these four et letters, M-A-T-H, fortunately fo very " plain, give the clearest light; for as they " must have been part of the word ARIMA-" THEA, they prove that the opinion of 4. Joseph of Arimathæa's having first preached the Gospel in Britain, was known so early as in the fecond century, and fo " decide that long-contested point; as, who se can be fuch an Infidel as to doubt a thing given thus, as I may fay, under the facred se feal of the mitre, and that fo very near " the time." "Very true! but is it not as probable, that " the defign of this writing was to refute " that opinion, as to confirm it?" " My good Sir, if you allow weight to

fuch trivial objections as this, you give up

66

66 9

" t

"

es t

cc t

cc . C

" tl

" 0

cc is

" th

takii

in w

" T

"ch

" ba

" th

"sto

" n

" ab

66

" all the knowledge of an Antiquarian, which "never amounts higher, than to possible " conjecture, without regard to probability " even against him; for conjectures such as " this, founded on effaced remains of antiquity, " are of much greater weight in the learned " world, because they shew more learning than " the plainest conclusions drawn from evident, " and compleat records, as these are obvious to " any common person. But why do I men-" tion these things to you, who understand " them fo much better than I pretend to " do."

"I believe I do, Sir, know fomething of "those matters; and was fatisfied both of " its antiquity, and importance, at the first " glance of my eye; though I started that " objection for mere amusement. But where " is the fragment? I should be glad to fee " that also."

1-

g

an

le

e-

ti-

it

nd

m

of

ed

he

res

nat

our

ery

ney

IA.

of

ch-

fo

fo

ho

ing

red

lear

hat

fute

t to

e up

all

"Here it is, Sir;" (answered my master, taking a bit of broken copper out of a box, in which it was earefully wrapped in cotton) " This plate of copper was torn in the man-" ner you fee, from the head of a fepul-" chral monument, on the top of mount Li-" banus, by a person who had been sent " thither by a celebrated Society, on purpose "to feek for such things; and at his return "made me a prefent of it, as the most valu-" able acquifition he had made, out of gra-" titude for my having helped him to the " job.

CHRYSAL: Or, the TOO

iob. Observe this canker, Sir! Much as it has been rubbed off in the carriage; the 44 depth and colour of it shew, that it must " have been some thousands of years in gathering. What the occasion of setting it " up was, some particular circumstances direct to a conjecture fufficiently probable. You fee this bole, which the canker has eaten almost through the copper, with this " ftroke turning up over it. This certainly is the remains of the figure of a lion, as is plain from these two tufts in the mid-" dle, and at the end of the stroke, which " must have been the tail of it. Now as a " lion was the emblem of Judah, it cannot " be doubted but some great personage of that tribe must have been buried, where this emblem was set up; a circumstance, that fo clearly proves the antiquity of coals " of arms, that I do not know how to think of parting with it, it affords fuch an il-" lustration to a treatise I am at this time engaged in writing on that sublime, and difficult subject." " Not part with it !" (replied the Antiqua-

rian, returning it carefully into the box, and then cramming the box into his bosom) " you must get it first, my good friend, to part with. Hah! hah! hah! a very pretty " jest truely! you offer a thing to sale, and if set a price upon it, and then you cannot part, with it! a very pretty est truely!

" Here

46

44-..

46

not

1151

66 ec /

..

wit ec t

ce D

a ti

4 D

" a

10 M

cc n

ce I

" al

" 0

u P

oc T

« ar

" W a hi

"Here is your money, both for the manu-" script, and the fragment; and when you

" meet with any other fuch precious remains

" of antiquity, I shall be obliged to you to

" let me have the preference. No body will

" give you a better price."

as

he

ult

ga-

it

di-

le.

nas

his

nly

as

id-

ch

s a

ot

of

ere

ce,

als

nk

il.

me

ba

ua-

ind

m)

to

tty

ind

not

y!

ere

Saying this, he reached my master a banknote, which he took with an air of diffatisfaction; and while he was telling out change, "You do as you please with me, Sir, " (faid he) this time; but the next, I shall. " be more upon my guard. I am glad, " however, that it goes into so noble a col-

" lection as your's, where it will have justice

" done to its merit."

" Aye, Sir!" (answered the Antiquarian, with a fmile of felf-complacency) "I have " been at some pains, and expence too, to " make a collection; and have the fatisfac-" tion to think, that whenever I die, it will " make as good a figure in a fale catalogue " as that of most of my cotemporaries. I " shall leave proofs behind me, that I have " not spent my life in vain. What would " I not give to hear the character which an " able Austioneer will give of me, upon " opening the fale? I wish my good friend " Puffe may out live me, to have the job. "There is no man fets forth the merit of " any thing in such happy terms. He has

words at will, as they fay. What an high opinion will he raile of my learning,

F 3 " tafte,

102 CHRYSAL: Or the

" tafte, and judgement? But that's right. "You faid you wanted this fragment, for " a particular occasion! I am by no means " averse to obliging you. You are wel-" come to quote it, as in my collection, fup-" pose in this, or some such manner, " as " appears (proving what you have advanced before) by a most valuable, and rare an-"tique fragment, (or whatever else you shall " call it) in the most curious, or costly, or " inestimable, or noble, (or perhaps all these) " collection of my late most learned, and judicious, and indefatigable, and munificent " friend," or whatever other titles of the " kind your judgment and regard shall dictate to you." "I am much obliged to you, for the fa-

"I am much obliged to you, for the fa"vour;" (returned my master, searce able
to restrain his laughter) "and shall be sure
"to avail myself of it, at the proper time,
"as also to do it in a manner, which however short it may fall of your merit, will
yet testify my high and respectful sense of
it."—Saying this, he gave him the change
of his note, among which I was, and sent

him away happy.

CHAP.

200

An

and

-ma

tho

had

as

dire

rare

in able

it.

or

elp-

as

C-

11-

11

or

e)

16 -

nt

10

C-

1-

le

re

.

11

of

e

10

CHAP. XV.

A modest method of seeking fame. Chrysal's master confirms himself in his resolution to gratify an uncommon curiosity, by a great example. The judicious and learned manner, in which he classed and entered his new acquisitions. Curious remark on the value of books. He goes to an auttion, where he makes an extraordinary purchase. Chrysale sal changes his service, for that of the Authoreer. Specimen and effects of his new master's eloquence, learning, and judgement.

A. MAN's spending his life and fortune, in buying up books of learning, and obscure remains of antiquity, only tomake a great fale after his death, was a method of feeking fame more modest than I had hitherto met among mankind. As foon as my new mafter reached home, he went directly into his Museum, and taking out his rare purchases, stared at them for some time in a kind of stupid delight, till no longer able to contain it, "What an opinion (faid " he) will the world have of me, when all " these come to be shewn for sale? I hope " my worthy friend Puff will live to do " me justice! What if I should beg of him F 4

"to give me a specimen of the manner in which he will set them out? He cannot refuse me that gratification, in return for all the money he has taken from me, especially as I have told him, that I design he shall have the job. Such a request is not improper. It has the sanction of one of the greatest names in antiquity to support it. Gicero, the great Cicero desired his friend the historian to let him know what he intended to say of him; and need I hesitate to sollow his example? Whatever has the authority of antiquity must be right; and therefore I will go to him directly about it.—But hold! I must enter these articles

he

(re

44

66

66

"

66 7

"

"

46-

44

44

16

10

ed

" in my catalogue first."

Then taking down an huge folio richly bound, and inscribed CATALOGUE, on the back and fides, in capitals of gold, he fat down to infert this valuable addition to his treasure, and opening the book with great deliberation, "What are the beads (faid he) " under which they are to be classed? Let " me fee! Antiques! no. That is for my coins, and bufts, and urns. What is the " next? Ancient manuscripts, and fragments! " Aye! thefe are they. Let me confider " now what are the titles!"-Then laying the fore-finger of his right hand upon the tip of his no'e, supporting his chin with his thumb, shutting his eyes, and leaning back in his chair, on the arm of which he

he rested his elbow, " How unlucky it was" (refumed he, after a long pause) " that he " did not tell their names! I was ashamed to ask him directly, though I did as much, " if he had minded me. But can't I make " them out, from what he said? A very an-" tique manuscript-no. That will not do. " Antique is for works of art; ancient is the " word here. — A very ancient manuscript " written by Thomas à Becket in the second " century, and found in bis tomb, at the Re-" foration, proving that Joseph of Arima-" thea was an English bishop.—Yes. That " is it. And then for the fragment, - a " very ancient—no, antique. Antique is the " word for fragments, they are made by " art; a very antique fragment torn from a " monument on Mount Libanus, proving that. " some great person was buried there; and " that a lien was the arms of Judah. - Aye!. " these will do! I knew I could make them, " out. This is just the substance of what. " he faid, but in fewer and better words., " Titles should be short and pithy. Multum in parvo. Much in a little compass. Let me. " alone for hitting off a striking title. I have " not been an Antiquarian so long for no-"thing."-Then conning them over twice, or thrice to try how they founded, he entered them in his catalogue, and putting the book back into its place, fat down to contem-E 5 plate:

in reall

illy

mthe

it.

in-

ate

he

nd

ut

les

ly

he

nis

115

at

e)

et

ny ·

y

ne

5!

er.

-

n

ħ

g

c

plate his own consequence in the learned world.

But sublime as this enjoyment was, his indefatigable industry would not permit him to indulge it long. "Hah!" (faid he, flarting, as upon fudden recollection) "that's " right! the fale of those Chinese characters, " brought over in the last fleet, comes on " about this very time. It was quite out of my head; and I would not have miffed of them on any account. They'll make a " capital article; for the Chinese taste is com-" ing into fuch great vogue, that I suppose we shall foon learn their language; though " I should be forry to see that too; as it " would lessen the value of my Chinese books; for books are valued now the more for not being understood, as I know by experience, having laid out many a pound " in the purchase of fuch as I understand on more of, than if they were Chinese. But let those, who know no other use of " books but to read them, buy only fuch as they can read: I collett mine for another " purpose, and a noble collection I will have, " let it cost me what it will; I care not " whether I die worth a groat beside. fame of that is fortune enough for me." Pursuant to this noble resolution he went directly to the fale, where he was fo charmed with the Authioneer's learning, and elo-

quence, that he out-bade every body, and

ed,
wh
Au
dei
the
cu
thi

gal

ve:

an

Ca

th

pr

all

th

nor bor dit rea on fuc bei

the ed and the

jul

ter be

carried

d

S

s,

n

of

d

a

h

t

d

d

15

r

t

e

d

d

carried off in triumph the curious, the rare; the inestimable key, into all the mysterious, the profound, the sublime wisdom of that prince of all Philosophers, Legislators, and Hierarchs, the divine CON-FUT-SEE, and all his learned, and judicious Disciples and Commentators, THE CHINESE CHARACTERS, in paying for which, I changed his fervice, for that of the Austioneer.

My new master proceeded for the remainder of the sale, to display his abilities in the same extraordinary manner; giving circumftantial accounts of things he knew nothing of; and bestowing the most extravagant praises for excellencies of his own invention, often inconfiftent with each other; and with the subject to which they were ignorantly attributed, with a confidence that' bore down doubt, and gained implicit credit with the gaping croud, in defiance to reason, and their very senses, till he led them' on by little and little to pay the price of fuch an imaginary value. But this will be best explained by an instance that happened just after I came into his possession.

The sale of that day consisted nominally of the collection of a Cheefemonger lately deceafed, who had been an eminent Antiquarian, and Virtuofo. I fay nominally; because though the whole went under his name, scarce the tenth part of it had ever been his, the rest' being made up from every quarter by my maft

ter.

ter. Among the rare, curious, and coftly articles exhibited on this occasion, was a vesself of Porcelaine, of an uncommon shape, ornamented with several odd and uncouth representations of animals, and some figures, not unlike the characters of a language.

66

4

64

"

66

66

23

65

23

66.

66

"

"Gentlemen," (faid my mafter, as foon as this was produced) "You here see one of " the rareft, and most valuable remains of " antiquity, ever brought into Europe. This " bere superb vase was the identical cup, out of which the sublime emperours of " China for numberless ages drank the con-" fecrated wine, on the day of their corona-" tion. It was found, gentlemen, among " the treasures of the Great Mogul, by Thomas " Couli Can, when he dethroned that there-" prince, out of the wreck of whose spoils, " when they were loft in passing the river of " the Indies, it was faved by a Chinese Nabob, " from whom it was afterwards taken, to-" gether with his crown, by that there bea-" ven-born general, who made those effeminate, and daftardly Indians tremble at the " name of an Englishman, and given by him. as a precious token of his efteem, to the deceased, his very learned, and eurious friend. " This, gentlemen, is in few words the whole " full and true account of this here inestim-" able curiofity, every word of which can-" be proved by unquestionable authority. As for the vale itself, exclusive of all this, " its:

Adventures of a GUINEA. 109 its own merits give it sufficient value. Obferve these here figures, gentlemen; they " are Egyptian bieroglyphicks denoting the " duties of a fovereign, which those wie " Mandarines always take care to instruct " their emperours in. This here lion, for " instance, signifies that he must be cou-" rageous and valiant; this fox, that he must be wife; and fo on. But the most extraor-" dinary thing of all, gentlemen, is these here " characters. They are a talifman, or charm, " invented by Mahomet to protect the ownerof this cup from the influence of evil " spirits. I do not presume, gentlemen, to " fland up for the virtue of fuch things. " The notion of spirits, I am sensible, is-" much exploded; and the religion of Ma-" bomet cried down among us; but still, " gentlemen, without entering into these here " nice points, we all know that he was a " great man, and lived a great while agoe, " which is fufficient to make any thing that " was his, of great value to men of learn-" ing, who are above prejudice in these matters. But beside all this, these here cha-" racters are of the greatest importance, on another account; as they prove beyond " dispute, that the true method of writing " the learned languages was without accents, " not one appearing, as you fee, gentlemen, in this most original, and authentick relick of antient learning, and fo put

110 CHRYSAL: Or, the

an end to that there controversy, that has

" fo long puzzled the world. It were pre-

" fumption in me, gentlemen, to attempt putting a value on a thing that is invalu-

"able. I will therefore fet it up at what

" you please, as you are the best judges.

"This only I will make bold to fay, that

" the best judge of all will have it, as he

" will give most for it; for too much it is impossible to give."

So just an account, and such judicious praise, could not fail of effect. The Virtuosi round him, satisfied that what he said must be true, because spoken with considence, and above their comprehension, vied with each other for the possession of so inestimable a treasure, till they raised it to an height, at which they themselves were surprized, as soon as the spirit of bidding began to cool, and they had time to resect.

with the salidation to make and clauging that we are its, or great verse to men of love?

ing, who are more resemble in the its salidation. But talk that, and there are classically are of the great its apparatue, for another account a saliday prove heycond widelpatts that that method, of legitlar.

"A shart, in the most conglined, and applied-

WE 33 .

minis in hard A franchista a spring

THE WINDS AND THE PROPERTY OF THE PROPERTY OF

CHAP. XVI.

t

An unsavoury accident stops him short in his harangue. He turns off the jest, with another, and accounts learnedly for what has happened. The real cause, and consequence of that accident. Restections on auctioneering, and the causes of its success.

HIS was the time, for which he always referved the highest flights of his eloquence, to raise that spirit again. Refuming therefore his harangue, " You paufe, " gentlemen, (faid he) only to confider how " much farther you may rife with fafety; " for it is impossible that persons of your " profound tafte and judgement should dif-" grace them fo much, as to let fuch a " jewel go for so mere a trifle. Do not " take my word, gentlemen, for its value. " I may be mistaken, but you cannot. Ex-" amine it therefore yourselves. Observe the " beauty of these here unknown figures! " read these unintelligible characters; and " fmell the aromatick odour which the vafe " still retains, and ever will retain, from " the quintessences of all the spices of the " Indies, which used to be mixed with the " consecrated wine. The perfume is al-" most enough to revive the dead." Saying

Saying this, he went to smell it himself to lead the way to the reft, and putting the mouth of it to his nofe, without taking off the cover, that the fragrance should not evaporate, as he raifed his hand, a stream, that emitted a favour far from aromatick, gushed out into his face, and filled his mouth, as well as nofe, with fomething more fubstan-

tial than perfume:

It is impossible to describe his situation, at fuch a difgraceful accident. Surprize, shame, and loathing aggravated each other, and threw him into fuch confusion, as once in his life deprived him of utterance for some moments. As foon as he had emptied his mouth, and wiped his face, "Villain," (fputtered he, to his fervant), " how has this hap-" pened? Whom have you let play me this

5 bafe, malicious, low-liv'd trick?"

" S-S- Sir, (answered the fellow, as well as his struggle to suppress his laughter permitted him to fpeak) "I know nothing of the matter. I never left any one a " moment alone among the things, but them there ladies, who I told you fent " me out for a glass of Ratifia, to'ther " morning, and how could I have suffected

" their doing such a thing ?

MINIE :

" Ratifia!" (replied my master, who had by this time recovered his affurance, and knew the best way to turn off one jest is by another) "Gin, you should say; for if

elf

he

off

7a-

at

ed

as

n-

at

e, ..

d

n

e

is

t-

)=

3

3

" I can judge by tafte, and fmell, that is " their liquour. I suppose they did it on. 4 purpose to revenge their sex upon Maho-" met, for taking away their fouls (I wish " he had also taken away the filthiness of " their dispositions!) by defiling so celebrated a monument of his learning and " skill, in this nasty manner, Hah! hah? " hah!"-

The oddity of fuch a thought naturally made the company join in his laugh; but could not fo far wipe off the difgrace which the defiled vale had fuffered, as to make any more be offered for it, fo that it was forced to be knocked down to the last bidder, at not much more than if it had been made of gold, at which the purchaser and my master were equally mortified, though for different and with very unequal reasons. As for the cause of this misfortune, it was really what the fervant said. One of the ladies who came to view the curiofities having certain preffing occasions, feigned a pretence to send him out; and in the mean time made such use of this vafe, being the first conveniency that came to her hand, as over-powered the scent of fome spices, which had been put into it for the purpose.

It was fortunate for my master, that this was the last article in the sale of that day, as a spirit of ridicule could not be favourable to his business. As soon as the company

fe

th

tu

ne

pt

th

ta

fo

to

20

ar

P

in

a

Ca

ti

..

"

le

fp

n

T

p

was gone, he fettled his accounts, and fumming up the profits, "Why this is pretty " well !" (faid he, rubbing his hands and shrugging up his shoulders) "this does pretty " well! Though if that damned accident " had not happened, (turning up his nofe, " and fpitting with loathing) it would have " been much better. The fools were in the " humour, and wanted only to be kept up. However, I have not much right " to complain upon the whole. That there " Yordan cost me five shillings, and I have " fold it for fifty pounds. Much good may " the judicious buyer make of his bargain. "This is the happiness of a man's having " his tongue well bung. A mealy mouth will never do in my business; which after " all is the best going. I might have stood " freezing behind a counter this month, and " not make half this much. In the way of " fair trade, as it is called, people have their " fenses about them, and stand to examine " before they buy, but any trumpery will go off in this way."

I have observed your astonishment, at the easiness with which my master succeeded in such gross imposition; but the reason of it is obvious. All mankind have an ambition of distinguishing themselves, one way or another; and generally chuse that, in which they have the least qualifications to entitle them to success, in order to hide their own desiciency. The coward, for instance, asserts

fects valour; the block-head knowledge; and the illiterate tradesman, who has made a fortune by plodding on in some illiberal business, taste and judgement in the abstrusest pursuits of learned curiosity, in which, as there is no fixed rule to judge by, caprice takes the direction, and opens an ample field

for imposition.

n-

LY nd

ty nt

le,

ve

he

pt

ht

re

ve

ly

n.

g h

er

d

d

of

ir

e

11

is

f

)-

h e

As to the business of auctioneering in general, it owes the greater part of that fuccefs, with which my mafter was fo pleafed, to another cause. The delire of buying bargains, which governs every one who buys any thing, makes people croud to those places, where things are to be fold, not as in the regular course of trade, for what they appear to be worth, but for the most that can be got for them; and there emulation, dependance on each other's judgement, " (those people know what they are doing, and " would not bid so much, if it was not worth "more") and the oratory of the auctioneer lead them by infentible advances, as their spirits rise, to give prices, which they never meant to give, when they began to bid. That great bargains are often got at fuch places is true, but that is chiefly in a particular branch of the business, the mystery of which will be explained to you.

man less been a si bana yap " incar

CHAP. XVII.

CHRYSAL's master is visited by a CONNOIS-SEUR, to whom he gives a short receipt how to make his pictures sell, and makes some striking remarks, on the disregard people show for their families, which send his visitor away in a huff.

In after was interrupted in his pleafing meditations, by the entrance of a gentleman, the fight of whom promised him the greater pleasure of carrying the subject of them into execution. After some judicious remarks on the taste of the town, and the present state of virtu in the course of which each liberally complimented the other, "Pray, Sir, (said the gentleman) how do pictures sell this season?"

"Never better, Sir," (answered my mafter) "Pictures are every body's money now.

" A good master brings any thing; and what

" is more, I am convinced they will rife till higher, fo that buyers have no time to

" lose. I have a sale next week, when you

" will fee fuch prices as will aftonish you.

"There are some things there, that I know

" you will have, let them cost what they will,
they suit your fine collection so exactly."

"Why, as to that," (replied the gentleman) "my mind is a good deal changed. I

" have

ne ev

tor

a a m

diof er,

do

ofw. at

to ou.

w ll,

e-L with my pictures, and have therefore call-

" ed upon you to desire that you will come
in the morning, and let me know what

" you think they are worth."

"Worth, Sir! they are worth a great deal of money; which there is not the least

" danger but they will bring, if they are

" managed properly. There is more, Sir, in the management of a fale, much more

" than most people dream of, I assure

" you."

"I am fensible of that, Sir; and also of your abilities in such management, which you will have the best encouragement to exert on this occasion, as I propose selling the whole to you together, if we can

" agree."

This turn came so unexpected that it struck my master quite down of the mouth, as he was sensible that he had over-shot himself, and spoiled his market by saying so much. "It is very unlucky, Sir;" (answered he, changing his note directly) "that I did not "know your intention sooner. I could then "have divided them properly among the several sales of the season; but it is now quite too late; this here one next week is "the last; and the catalogues for that are all "made out, and dispersed, so that there is "no possibility of slipping in a single article."

" Besides, the buyers have laid out all their

" money."

CHRYSAL: Or, the

"Slipping in, Sir! I don't understand you.

"Do not you think my pictures are sufficient

both in number and value to make a fale

" by themselves? I am sure I have more

"than once known you make noise enough

" about collections in no respect equal to " mine. There must be some mystery in

" this, which I cannot comprehend."

" Very true, Sir! there are mysteries, as " you observe, in all businesses; and per-

"haps in none more than our's."-

"I am not enquiring into your mysteries.

" All I defire to know is, why after just

" telling me that pictures never bore so high

" a price as at this time, and that mine " could not fail of bringing a great deal of

" money, you should so soon change your

" opinion."-

"Pardon me, Sir, I have not changed my " opinion in the leaft; and shall be very

" proud to ferve you to the best of my abi-

" lities, in the way of a fale; but there is " a material reason, why I must beg to be

" excused in buying them, to stand the ha-

" zard of it myself."-

"I should be glad to know what that rea-

" fon can be, for I must own I cannot con-

" ceive it."

"Why, Sir, it is a thing to be fure that

may feem odd to you; but experience has

" taught us the truth of it. In short, Sir,

" it is your being alive."-

" How

-66

66

46

ou. " How! my being alive! What difference « can my life or death make in the value ent " of my pictures?"ale " A very great one, Sir, I affore you. In re gh " all the course of my business, I never " knew one instance of a fale's going off to in " well, where the owner was living. Peo-" ple conclude that a person parts with pic-" tures either through diflike, or necessity. as " The former, you know, depreciates them at er-" once; nor does the other much lefs; as " people of fashion despise a man, and every es. aft " thing belonging to him, the moment it gh " is known that he is in diffres. Besides. " an Audioneer's tongue is tied up from fayne " ing any thing of a person's taste, and of " judgement, and all that, while he is livur " ing, it founds fo fulfome; and you are fen-" fible that a good character of the collector ny " often goes a great way in helping off a ry oi-" collection." " The best thing then for a man to do on is be " fuch an occasion, I presume, would be to " shoot himself through the head! Heh?" a-"Hah! hah! hah! You are pleased to jest, "Sir; but to be fure it would be of great an-

" advantage. Coriofity brings all the world " upon those occasions, and then a man has " an opportunity of faying fo many things, as "that the deceased would not take ten "times so much, if be were living;" or "that the high price be gave for it caused the dif-

at

as ir,

, 1

s tress

"tress that made bim kill bimself;" or a " thousand other striking things of the kind. "I never have so much pleasure, as upon " those occasions, they give a man such room " to shew himself. Indeed, if gentlemen con-" fidered the thing in time, more of them would take this method of delivering " themselves and their families both from " distress, and not defer it till all is gone, " and the furvivours can make nothing by " their death; but few people take any care " for their families now o' days. It is a " bold push to be sure; though not so bad as a man's shooting himself to win a wager " neither. I should beg your pardon, Sir, " for speaking so freely, but as I know it is " not your case, you cannot take offence; though even if I thought it was, I would " not prefume to recommend fuch a thing " for the world. Every body is to judge " for himfelf. I only give you my opinion " what effect it would have."

"I understand you very well, Sir," (anfwered the gentleman, who had much difficulty to hear him out) " And in return for " your opinion will give you my advice, " which is to confider better whom you " fpeak to in this infolent manner another " time, for fear of receiving fuch chaftifement, as contempt alone prevents my " giving you this moment." --- On faying which words he turned about, and left the room.

CHAP.

in I

fo.

gen

liev

thre

mer

hou

ing

cloa

" d

" fi

a

d.

m

m-

ng

m ne,

by

are

ad ger

ir,

is

e;

ing lge

ion

an-

for ice.

her

ife-

my

ing

the

CHAP. XVIII.

CHRYSAL's master receives an agreeable summons. His encomiums on the generosity of merchants, and account of the way many of them acquire reputation for taste and judgement. He meets the merchant, who consults him on a different branch of his business, from that which he expected. CHRYSAL's master, in order to encourage his customer, gives a large account of his own abilities, and opens some curious secrets in his business. A hargain is struck to the mutual satisfaction of both parties; and CHRYSAL changes his service for that of the merchant.

WELL as my master was accustomed to rebukes, there was something in the nature of this which disconcerted him so much that he had not power to make the gentleman any reply. But he was soon relieved from the trepidation into which it threw him, by a message from an eminent merchant to meet him directly at a neighbouring tavern. "Aye," (said he, adjusting his wig at the glass, and putting on his cloak) "this is the thing! There is some difference between treating with a good fubstantial citizen who will mind what a Vol. IV.

" man fays, and your people of fashion, " who fly into a rage forfooth, if they can't " have their own way, in every thing. No " people part with their money fo freely as " merchants. They don't stand higgling, " and crit cizing like the others. All they " require is to be asked a good price, and " then they think a thing must be good of course. Many a time have I got five " times more from a merchant, than I dared " to have asked from a duke. I suppose he " wants to shew his taste next week at the " fale; and has fent for me to tell him which are the best pieces, and how much " he may bid for them. He is not the " first citizen, whom my instructions have " made pass for a man of taste and judge-" ment. I love fuch pupils, they pay fo " well for their learning; and that more " ways than one; for they buy what no " body else would bid for; it is only slipping " a puffer or two of quality at them, enough of whom come sharking to every sale for " that purpose only, and they may be raised to any price. No people part with their " money like merchants." When he came to the tavern, he found the

When he came to the tavern, he found the merchant waiting for him. After the compliments common upon such occasions were politely interchanged, "I desired to see you" (said the merchant, proceeding to business, though not without evident confusion) " on

an

4

"

23

44

an

cc - 1

coff

ce t

(6 0

" I

" ti

" a

CE W

" th

" an

co fue

" be

" ha

" Wa

n,

n't

Vo

as

ıg,

ley nd

of

ive

red

he

the

im

uch

the

ave

gefo

ore no

ping

nugh

for

ifed

heir

the

om-

were ou"

ness,

on on an an

" an affair, that will convince you of my " confidence in your abilities and honour. "Trade, as you know, has been fo dead for " fome time past, that there is no getting in " a penny of money, without tearing people " to pieces. Now as I had rather fuffer " fomething myfelf, than oppress any honest " man, till he can bring his affairs about, I " should be glad to dispose of some parcels " of goods, even under their value, to raife " money for present occasions, that is, pro-" vided it can be done in such a manner, as " not to be known, as fuch a thing might " injure a man's credit." "Dear Sir," (answered my master, whose

heart leaped with joy, at the mention of fuch' an affair) "never fear that ; I'll engage to " manage it fo, that if every one who knows " you, were to watch, they'd never even fu-" spect the least of the matter. There is no-" thing easier, nor more common in the way " of bufiness; and it luckily happens, that " I have the finest opportunity at this very " time, that ever I had in my life. I have " a large fale under a commission, the very " week after next, into which I can bedge a " thousand or two, with the greatest eafe " and fafety. Affignees never take notice of " fuch things. We understand one another " better than that. Many a worthy man " have I enabled to hold his head above " water, for years, by this method. To be

" fure, it must have an end some time; but then a man stands in fortune's way for a " lucky hit, you know; and not only that, but also makes fore of formuch good liv-" ing, in the mean time, and can be no worfe at the last: and then when all comes to es all, and there must be a blow-up, it gives " him an opportunity of fecuring fome-" thing against a rainy day, as the faying is. " As for its being discovered, there are " ways enough to prevent that. It is but entering them as sold, and I'll find a buyer, that shall never be beard more of. Lord. " Sir, if it was not for things of this kind, our bufiness would be nothing to what it is. Half the fales you fee every day in the papers, are made up in this man-

« ner." "Well, Sir," (replied the merchant, who had liftened to him, with attention, and feemed greatly affected at some part of what he faid) "I presume you understand your s business, and as I have no doubt of your 46 honour, I shall leave the whole entirely " to your management. Here is an account of the particulars, which I want to difof pose of at this time. They are in a private warehouse, whither I have had them conveyed to be ready for the purpose, of " which this is the key; and here is a bill of fale, which I will execute directly, as I " have an occasion for two thousand pounds 66 this

this very evening. You fee there is value, " more than fufficient for double that fum, as you will be a better judge when you " fee the goods, but the rest can stand forward, till they are disposed of; and the " account made up. "

" Really, Sir, I should be extreamly glad se to ferve you, but I fear, I have not fo " much cash by me. However, if you " please, I'll go with you, and look at the " goods; and then I'll step home, and try "what I can do."

Accordingly away they went together to the warehouse; where my master, being satisfied with the value of the goods, left the merchant, and hied him home directly with

a goyful heart for the money. It don't sale no "So!" (faid he, to himfelf, as he went along) " I thought what things would dome " to, in the end! His coach, and country-" house! his wife's routs; and his own kept " mistress have made quick work with him. " I believe fuch men must imagine the rest " of the world to be blind, or they would " never go on at such a rate. I suppose " he's preparing for a place in the Gazette " to-morrow, or next day. But that is no " affair of mine. I'll take care to make a " fafe bargain for myfelf; and let him look " to the rest. I am not to swear for bim.

" Of all the business in our way, I like this " the best. A man can make up what ac-

" count

livworfe es to gives ome-

but

for a

that.

ng is are s but

uyer, ord, kind, what

day man-

who and what your your

tirely count difpri-

them e, of bill

as I unds this

126 CHRYSAL: Or, the

" count he pleases, without danger of its being disputed with him. All here is

fang and secure. If I could but get jobs

" enough of this kind, I'd let who would chaffer for toys, and daubings with people

" of quality, who often outsbarp us, in spite

of all our experience."

By this time he reached home, where he foon made up the money, with the help of that and the former day's fale, without hesitating a moment at its not being his own, and taking with him proper persons to attest his bargain, and new locks to make sure of it, returned to the merchant, with whom he soon concluded every thing without scruple or delay on either side, and then paying him on the spot, in bank-notes, and cash, (among the latter of which I was) sent him away, as well satisfied, as he himself staid behind.

bouffel his wife's routs; and his own kept miller's nave roke quick work work with him. I befreve fact men make imagane the raft of the varid to be boind, or they mould never go on an ittain a rest. I happen to he's preparing for a piace in the Gazent to corrow, or next day. But paring to reach the care to, make a stant of mineral because care to, make a the bart of mineral because care to, make a

the before A man can make up what ac-

to count

.P.A HO etc. I am not to frecht for him.

CHAP. XIX.

Motive of Chrysal's new master for making such a bargain, with the many and great advantages a merchant may make of being in the bouse. A short sketch of an election. The curious method, which CHRYSAL's master took to evade the laws against bribery. He takes offence at the unreasonable presumption of bis constituents, and resolves to make the most of the bargain be bas bought from them, which by a singular piece of management be proposes to make cheaper than they think. CHRYSAL changes bis service, for that of the idol of an inn. The consequences of electioneering. Some account of CHRYSAL's new mistress. He quits ber service, for a curious purpose. An expedient to prevent the sale of poisson for mind, and body. CHRY-SAL again changes bis service.

WHEN a man has fixed his mind upon gaining a particular end, he flights any inconveniences, which may attend the means. Though my new master was sensible of the loss he must suffer by his bargain, the prospect of accomplishing the purpose for which he made it, prevented its giving him any concern.

G 4

As

of its re is jobs ould cople spite

e he of nefiwn, tteft of he ple

ng as

As foon as he got home, he gave orders to have his equipage made ready for a journey into the country, early next morning, and then retiring into his closet, for a few moments before he went to bed, "At length" (faid he, with a look of felf-congratulation) " I shall compass, what I have so long set my heart upon. What an advantage is it " to a merchant to be in the House! I can " laugh at bailiffs and bankruptcies for five " years at least; and in the mean time I shall " have a thousand opportunities of making " my fortune, by pushing boldly in the alley, on now that all fears of the immediate confequences are over, or getting beneficial con-" trafts with the government, or at least " fome genteel, and profitable employment " under it. A merchant may make many " advantages of being in the House! Con" found that prating fellow! I was once or afraid that he smoaked my design, he came " fo near some unlucky circumstances; but it was above his tut. All his schemes are " common, and low-liv'd. This of mine " is a master-stroke. It is playing deep, to be fure! Fifteen hundred for my feat ; and what with other expences, and the fols " upon this night's work, as much more. " It is playing damn'd deep. But it is too " late to think of that now. I have sported er many a thousand upon a worse chance in " my time. At any rate, I can laugh at " bailiffs

" bailiffs and bankruptcies, for five years at

" chant to be in the House!" | salt gribers

ders

ur-

ng,

few

th"

on)

fet

s it

can

ive

rall

ng

ley,

fe-

on-

aft

nt

ny

n-

ce

ne

ut

re

ne

to

d

ſs

0

d

n

It.

Saying this he went to bed, where the advantages of being in the House still ran so strongly in his head, that he dreamed of nothing all night, but bullying creditors, and cringing to ministers; doing jobs, and getting contrasts, places, and pensions.

In pursuance of his scheme, he set out next morning with a splendid retinue for the burrough he had in view, where he managed matters with fuch judgement and generosity, keeping the whole town drunk from the moment he arrived, according to the policy which permits a candidate to deprive his eloctors of their fenses, in order to enable them to judge the better of bis legislative abilities, that he was elected in preference to a gentleman, the munificence of whose family had for many generations been the chief support of the place, and who himself spent his ample fortune in hospitality, and beneficence in it, but difdained to buy the votes of a venal crew, on this occasion.

As such a competitor naturally had every man of worth and honour in his interest, it had been necessary for my master to proceed with the utmost care and circumspection. Accordingly instead of directly giving his voters money, he lent them the prices stipulated, on the security of their notes of hand,

G 5

payable

plymyle

payable in a certain time; an expedient, in which he had a farther view, than barely evading the laws against such practices.

Every thing being concluded, he was preparing to depart in triumph, when his confituents waited upon him in form, with certain instructions, for executing the trust they had thus reposed in him. Though he looked upon this as such a bare-faced piece of infolence, that he scarce knew how to bear it, yet as he had not yet taken his feat, he received their commands with the politest bumihily, and promised the most faithful obedience to them. But they were no fooner out of his fight, than he changed his note. " Imopudent, unreasonable scoundrels !" (faid he to himself, giving vent to his indignation, as he walked back and forward in the room) " to talk of having reposed your trust in " me, and pretend to give me instructions! " I have bought you; and I will fell you to the best bidder, if he were the devil; and " a bad bargain he will have of you, if he buys you as dear as I have. Though I " have a stroke in my head to bring myself " home, that you little think of. Those " notes of hand, which you thought I took " only to evade the law, shall be paid to the " last faithing, if I am not chosen for nothing, next election. You shall find you that on the fromth of their notices in hand;

HI

hi

ne

CO

he

a

VY

Cil

to

kı

T

W

T

ta

lit

pr

ne

w

rig

ye

ne

ca

tu

fla

CO

w

ed

to

he

his coach was ready, and the landlord's daughter coming to wish him a good journey, he faluted her politely, and slipping a couple of guineas (one of which I was) into her hand to buy a ribbon, left the house like a man of honour.

I have not entered particularly into the circumstances of electioneering. They are too gross to give pleasure; and too well known to require repetition even to- you. The effects, I mean immediately in the place, were fuch as reason may suggest to you. The electors, instead of making any advantage of the price, for which they had thus literally fold their consciences, liberties, and properties, continued to wallow in drunkenness, till every penny of it was spent, after which it was fo long before they could fettlerightly to work again, that it required a year's hard labour and flarving to repair what: they suffered by this bout of excess and idleness. bloom offered was price and as delil

My new mistress was what is not unjustly called the idol of an inn. Endowed by nature with prettiness enough to entitle her to flattery, and sufficient pertness to make her a coquet, on her return from a boarding-school, where her natural talents were so well improved by education, that she was thought sit to try her fortune in the world, she took her place in the bar, and slirted away with

G. 6

every gentleman, that came to the house, in hopes of taking in some one of the number for marriage, as others in her way had done. on the political set less than a

The first passion of the female heart is for finery, to the gratification of which girls feldom fail to apply all the money in their power. But though my mistress was very far from being infentible to this passion, another scarce less powerful with the fex took place of it at this time, which was curiofity, office years the come asom to atosti

A young officer, who had lately been quartered in the house and made warm addreffes to her, had faid fo many fine things in praise of a certain book, called Memoirs of a Lady of Pleasure, that the resolved to fee it, and for that purpose applied at a circulating library in the town, the keeper of which told her, it was fo fcarce and valuable a book that he could not possibly procure it for her, under a guinea.

High as this price was, she would have found means to raise it, so strong was her curiofity, had not the hurry of the election, which just then came on, taken up all her time. But every obstacle was now removed, and the very evening I came into her poffeffion, the muffled herfelf up in one of the maid's cloaks, and went for it as foon as it was dark, when I was the purchase of her ex-

traordinary bargain.

I fee

I

and

out

at a whi

is to

you fole

poe

for cc b

be a ven

fon

a. 1

feve

pre

ject

cer

apo

bot WO

it i

ing

ly

der tut

lon

in

m-

ad

or

el-

eir

гу

0-

ok

ri.

en

d-

gs

irs

to

1-

of

le

it

ve

er

n,

èr

d.

ſ-

ne

is

ķ-

ee

I fee you are shocked at the dishonesty and wickedness of my new master for hiring out at such a price, or indeed at any price at all, a book, whose obvious design (and which it is too well calculated to accomplish) is to supplant every principle of virtue in the youthful mind. But the blame rests not solely upon him. The excuse, which the poet puts into the mouth of the apothecary for selling posson, that " his poverty, but not " his will consented," may with equal justice be alleged in palliation of a poor bookseller's vending impious or immoral books, the poison of the mind.

For this reason, as no penalty, however fevere, may be fufficient to combat that neceffity, the most effectual way to prevent the vending of either poison would be absolutely to prohibit all those, whose poverty might subject them to fuch temptation from trading in books or druggs of any kind; as it is most certain, that if there were neither poor apothecaries, nor poor booksellers, the fale of both vicious books, and noxious druggs, would be much less extensive than it is, if it could not be totally suppressed; there being very few of the human species so entirely given up to a reprobate fenfe, as to murder either the foul or body of a fellow creature, merely for the pleasure of doing it.

It may be judged that I did not remain long in the fervice of this master. The next morning

134 CHRYSAL: Or, the

morning after I came into his possession, he came to London, where he laid out all the money he had in the purchase of a parcel of such books, as he thought most likely to suit the taste of his customers, without regard either to virtue, or religion, on which occasion I changed his service for that of his bookseller.



e alleged i. XX ... A H. D bookfeller's

Account of Chrysal's new master. His beroick spirit, and resolution to push for a pension or a pillory. Meeting between him and a poet, who turns the tables upon him. A curious method of forming a judgement of a work of genius. Chrysal's master is beaten out of all his art; and for once buys a book by quality, not quantity. The value of an authour's name. Chrysal changes his service.

Y new master was one of those aspiring geinus's, whom desperate circumstances drive to push at every thing, and court consequences, the bare apprehension of which terrifies men, who have some character and fortune to lose, out of their senses. He was that evening to meet at a tavern, an authour, the boldness and beauty of whose writings writilick madfafet

mast dom racte he,

" It

" fe

" hi

" th

" d

" th

" fu

" g

" g

writings had for some time engaged the publick attention in a particular manner, and made his numerous admirers tremble for his safety.

he

e}

to

e-

ch

15

*

4

171

3.

of

25

ys

10

es

d

R

1-

n

As he happened to out-flay his time, my master's importance took offence at a freedom, which he thought fo much out of character: " This is very pretty truly !" (faid he, walking back and forward in a chafe) "that I should wait an hour for an authour. " It was his busmess to have been here first, " and waited for me; but he is fo puffed " up of late, that he has quite forgot him-" felf. Bookfellers seldom meet with such " insolence from authours. I should serve " him right to go away and disappoint him. " But would not that disappoint myself " more? He is come into fuch vogue lately, " that the best man in the trade would be " glad to get him. Well! if he does not " do what I want, I know not who can! " Fools may be frighted at the thoughts of " a cart's-tail, or a pillory, I know better " things. Where they come in a popular " cause, nothing sets a man's name up to " fuch advantage; and that is the first step " toward making a fortune; as for the dan-" ger, it is only a mere bug-bear, while the " mob is on my fide. And therefore I'll " go on without fear, if I am not bought off. A pension, or a pillory is the word."

These heroick meditations were interrupted by the entrance of the authour, who throwing himself carelessly into a chair, "I be. " lieve I have made you wait (said he) but "I could not help it. I was obliged to flay " to kick a puppy of a printer, who had been impertinent, as I am to meet company directly, to let me hear what you Shave to fay. "not has alond galaliaw "I thought, Sir," (answered my master, with an air of offended importance) " you " had appointed me to meet you here on bufinefs; and bufinefs you know cannot be hurried over to foon." " Don't mention bufinefs to me la I hate " the very name of it; and as to any that ean possibly be between you and me, it "may be done in five minutes, as well as " five years, fo fpeak directly, and without " farther preamble, for all your fineffes could " have no effect upon me, even if I would " fubmit to let you try them." Fineffes, Sir! I don't know what you " mean! I defie the world to charge me, " with having ever been guilty of any. The

"mean! I defie the world to charge me, with having ever been guilty of any. The business I defired to meet you upon, was about a poem, I was informed you had ready for the press, and which I should be glad to treat with you for."

" Well, Sir! And what will you give me
" for it? Be quick; for I cannot wait to
" make many words."—

What!

46

" po

" OV

ec mu

. 166

" de

es yo

W YO

Wit

" jud

" a

him a

room

T

geniu

lines

done

ing th

" F fa

" jut

ter,

Ofce

" no

"ho

cell ma

G 10.

" the

" the

"What! before I have feen it! It is im-" possible for me to say, till I have looked it " over, and can judge what it is, and bow " much it will make!"

pt--WC

be-

but

tay

had

m-

VOU

ter,

you

on not

ate hat

, it

25

out uld

uld

10U

ne,

he was

nad

uld

me to

at!

" As to your judging what it is, that must " depend upon inspiration, which I imagine " you will fcarcely make pretence to, till " you turn Methodift at least; but for what " it will make, here it is; and you may " judge of that, while I go down stairs for " a few minutes."-Saying which, he gave him an handful of loose papers, and left the room. ob niegard uby vam aboge

The first thing my master did, when left thus to form his judgement of a work of genius, was to number the pages, and then the lines in a page or two, by the time he had done which, the authour returned, and taking the papers out of his hand, " Well, Sir, " (faid he) and what is the refult of your "judgement Pitasses stom dount quag

"Why really, Sir," (answered my master, after fome panie) "I hardly know what " to fay. I have cast off the copy, and do " not think it will make more than a shilling,

"however pampoully printed."

"What you think it will make is not the "matter; but what you will give me for "the quantity."

"I do not doubt the quality of them in " the least, but considering how much the " trade

66

a

66

" kn

" m

" yo

" W

66 pl

" Shi

" ev

" gar

" It

" but

" pri

" tha

" is

er is a

" tion

e ner

" fied

" Sir,

" peri

" not

" thou " fpar

" in li

pirito

" P

66

**

"trade is over-stocked at present, and what a mere drug poetry has long been, I am a " good deal at a loss what to offer, as I " should be unwilling to give you or any " gentleman offence by feeming to under-"value your works. What do you think " of five guineas? I do not imagine that more can be given for so little; nor in-" deed should I be fond of giving even "that, but in compliment to you? I have had full twice as much for two many a stime."_____ set at about to tulbrad as " Much good may your bargain do you, "Sir; but I will not take less than fifty " for mine in compliment to you, or any " bookseller alive; and so, Sir, I desire to "know without more words, (for I told " you before that your eloquence would be "thrown away upon me!) whether you will give that; as I am in hafte to go to comer pany, much more agreeable to me than " Why really, Sir," (anfacred", s'quoy " What, Sir! fifty guineas, for scarce five " hundred lines! fuch a thing was never heard of in the trade."-"Confound your trade, and you together! "Here, waiter! what is to pay? But, dear, Sir, why will you be in "fuch an hurry? Can you not give yourself and me time to consider a little? Perhaps

"i we might come nearer to each other !"—
and noum woo grandlined and aff I have

obsm "

" I have told you before, and I repeat it again, that I will have fo much; and that " without more words."-

"You are very peremptory, Sir; but you " know your own value; and therefore in " hopes you will let me have more for my

" money next time, I will venture to give " you your price now; though really if it

" was not for your name, I could not poffi-" bly do it; but to be fure that is worth a

" shilling extraordinary I own."

at

3

I

ny

1-

ik

at

n-

en

ve

3

U,

iy

ny.

to

old

be

ill

m-

an

ve

rer

er!

in

elf

ps.

LVC-

"Which is twelvepence more than yours " ever will be, unless to the Ordinary of New-

" gate. But come! give me the money! I want to go to my company."-

"Well, Sir! this is an hasty bargain; but " I take it upon your word; and don't doubt

" but there is merit in it, to answer such a

" price. Satire, Sir! keen satire, and so plain,

" that be who runs may read, as the faying is,

" is the thing now o' days. Where there " is any doubt, or difficulty in the applica-

" tion it takes off the pleasure from the ge-

" nerality of readers, who will scarce be satis-" fied with less than the very name.

" Sir, is your great merit, Satire must be

" personal, or it will never do."

"Personal! that mine never shall be. Vices, " not Persons, are the objects of my fatire, " though where I find the former, I never " spare the latter, be the rank and character

" in life what it will."

philite

140 CHRYSAL: Or, the

My master had by this time counted out the money, (among which I was) which the authour took without telling over, and then went to his company, leaving the bookseller scarcely more pleased with his bargain, than mortified at the cavalier treatment he had met in making it.

えんのなるであるであるであるかんかん

CHAP. XXI.

Some account of the company, to which Chrystal's new master went. His behaviour to a young semale, who accosted him in his way home. He takes her to a tavern for an uncommon purpose, where he treats her uncommonly, and goes home with her, from as uncommon a motive. Account of what he saw in her habitation, with the manner in which he behaved there. He takes another lodging for the whole samily, where he leaves them abruptly, to save himself and them trouble.

THE company to which my new malter was in such haste to go, consisted of a sew persons, whom a similarity of temper had linked in the closest intimacy. With these, he spent the remainder of the evening, in a manner which sew would dislike, though sewer still could approve it; the spirited fpir fam of cou vice the

her out to curi

ed,

who

had hor lang him

his

gan

dou ed me bad the hou

peć upo stre fpirited wit, and liveliness of their conversation gilding the grossest debaucheries; at the same time, that the rectitude and sublimity of their sentiments, whenever their hearts could find opportunity to speak, made the vices of their practice still more horrible by the contrast.

out

the

hen

ller

han

nad

RY-

bis

for

ber

rom

in

ber

ves

bem

naf-

fted

ith

en-

the

They broke not up, as it may be imagined, till nature funk under their excesses, when my mafter, as he staggered home, was accosted by a female, who had something in her air and manner so different from those out casts of humanity, who offer themselves, to casual prostitution in the streets, that his curiofity was struck, and he stopped to take, more particular notice of her. She appeared to be about fifteen. Her figure was elegant; and her features regular; but want had ficklied o'er their beauty; and all the. horrours of despair gloomed through the languid smile she forced, when she addressed. him.

The figh of distress, which never struck his ear without affecting his heart, came with double force from such an object. He viewed her with silent compassion for some moments; and reaching her a piece of gold, bade her go home, and shelter herself from the inclemencies of the night, at so late an hour. Her surprize and joy at such unexpected charity overpowered her. She dropped upon her knees, in the wet and dirt of the street, and raising her hands and eyes toward heaven,

heaven, remained in that posture for some moments, unable to give utterance to the

bally

be the

cc cui

" for

"at

" po

46 to

direct

tuals

with

his o

tation

for h

ther

in he

N

have

refol

fee t

Hel

the

garre

mile

the l

firele

fteac

relic

and

thou

THE

gratitude that filled her heart.

Such a fight was more expressive than all the powers of eloquence. He raised her tenderly from the ground, and soothing her with words of comfort, offered to conduct her to some place, where she might get that refreshment of which she appeared to be in too great want. "O! Sir," (said she, pressing the hand that had raised her, with her cold trembling lips) "my deliverer, sent by heaven to save me from despair, let me not think of taking refreshment myself, till I have first procured it for those, whose greater wants I feel ten thousand times more severely than my own."

"Who can they be?" (interrupted he, with anxious impatience) "Can humanity feel greater wants, than those under which

you are finking?"

CAYCD.

"My father" (exclaimed she bursting into tears) "languishing under infirmities, ac"quired in the service of his country; my
"mother worne out with attending on him,
"and both perishing of want, (heaven grant
they are not already dead!) together with
"two infant brothers, insensible of the cause
"of their distress, and crying to them for a
"morsel of bread, which it is not in their
"power to give."—
"Where

tite and ruling her hands and eyes toward

10

11

er

t

n

Where can fuch a scene of wretchedness " be hidden from relief? I'll go with you myfelf directly! but ftop! let us first pro-" cure fome comfortable nourishment from " fome of the houses, which are kept open " at this late hour, for a very different pur-" pole. Come with me! we have no time " to lofe." - With these words, he went directly to a tavern, and enquiring what victuals were dreffed in the house, loaded her with as much as the could carry of the belt, and putting a couple of bottles of wine in his own pocket walked with her, to her habitation, which was in a blind alley, happily for her not very far diftant, as weakness together with the conflict of passions aruggling in her heart, made her fcarce able to go.

When they came to the door, the would have gone up first for a light, but he was resolved to accompany her, that he might see the whole scene in its genuine colours. He therefore followed her up to the top of the house, where opening the door of the garret she discovered to him such a scene of misery, as struck him with astonishment. By the light of a lamp, that glimmered in the fireless chimney, he saw lying on a bare bedstead, without any other covering than the relicks of their own rags, a man, a woman, and two children, shuddering with cold, though huddled together to share the little

warmth, which exhausted nature still supplied

While he stood gazing in horrour at such complicated wretchedness, his conductress ran to the bed-side, and falling on her knees, "O! Sir! Madam!" (exclaimed she, in rapture) "Arise! I have got relief from an "angel of heaven."

"Take care!" (answered a voice, the hollow trembling of which was sharpened by indignation) "take care it is not from a "fiend of hell, who has taken advantage "of your distress to tempt you to ruin! "for with whom else could you be till this "time of night? But know, wretched girl, "that I will never eat the earnings of "vice and infamy. A few hours will put "an end to my miseries, which have re-"ceived the only possible addition by this "your folly."

"He must be such indeed," (interrupted my master, still more struck with sentiments so uncommon in such a situation) "who "could think of tempting her in such cir-"cumstances to any folly. I will withdraw, "while you arise, and then we will consult "what can be soonest done to alleviate a distress, of which you appear so undeserving."—While he said this, he took the wine out of his pockets, and giving it to the daughter went directly down stairs, without waiting for a reply, and walking back and

joye is c relie ings

learn of hour mon mily Such

as h

" hu

" be

" no

" co " kn

" rov

" to

" and

" ma

and forward in the street for some time, enjoyed the sublimest pleasure the human heart is capable of, in confidering how he had relieved, and should further relieve the suffer-

ings of objects fo worthy of relief.

ed

ch

an

25,

p.

an

0

by

2

ge

n!

his

rl.

of

out

re-

his

ed

nts

ho

ir-

W,

ult

lif

rv-

the

to

th-

ack

and

By the time he thought they might have learned from their daughter the circumstances of her meeting with him, and taken some nourishment, he returned to them, when the moment he entered the room, the whole family fell upon their knees to thank him. Such humiliation was more than he could bear. He raised them, one by one, as fast as he could, and taking the father's hand, " Gracious God! (said he) can a sense of " humanity be fuch an uncommon thing " among creatures, who call themselves hu-" man, that so poor an exertion of it should " be thought deserving of a return, proper " to be made only to heaven? Oppress me " not, Sir, I conjure you, with the mention, " of what it would have been a crime, I " could never have forgiven myfelf to have " known I had not done. It is too late to " think of leaving this place before to-mor-" row, when I will provide a better, if there " is not any to which you chuse particularly " to go. I am not rich; but I thank hea-" ven, that it has bleffed me with ability. " and inclination to afford such assistance as " may be immediately necessary to you, Vol. IV. H

till means may be thought of for doing oved the molimest pleature, the husaromess.

"" O, Sir," (answered the mother) "well " might my daughter call you an angel of

" heaven! You know not from what milery wou have already relieved and and

Nor wild know more of it arthis time," (interrupted my mafter) which I

too plainty fee. I will leave you now to your reft, and return as foon as it is day .-

. " Speak not of leaving us, Sir," (exclaimed the daughter, who was afraid that if he should go away, he might not return) "What

"reft can we take, in for fhort a time? Leave us not, I beseech youd iteave us

"inot in this place !" does and winstrud

" Cease, my child!" (interposed the father) " nor press your benefactor to continue in a scene of misery, that must give

pain to his humane heart,"

"If my staying will not give you pain," (answered my master) " I will most willing.

" ly flay; but it must be on condition that our conversation points entirely forward to

" happier days. There will be time enough

" hereafter to look back."

Saying this, he fat down on the bed-fide, (for other feat the apartment afforded none) between the husband and wife, with whom he spent the little remainder of the night, in fuch discourse, as he thought most likely to divert their attention from their present mi-

fery hop ter hea taft

(faid mot ec y

hea

66 la 46 0 e pi

" (pe ec y

cc aca 66 W Fo

lity fpok ficien rectly pain diffre of dr per lo provid mult i ed hin

turn, the lo gave 4

fery,

fery, and inspire their minds with better hopes, while the children, all but the daughter who hung upon his words, comforted at heart with a better meal, than they had long tasted, fell fast asleep, as they leaned their heads upon their mother's lap.

As foon as it was day, "Now, madam," (faid my mafter, addressing himself to the mother) "I will go, and provide a place for "your reception, as you say all places are "alike to you. In the mean time accept of this trifle (giving her ten guineas) to

" provide fuch necessaries, as you may indif-"pensibly want before you remove. When "you are settled, we will see what further

"can be done. I shall be back with you

" within thefe three hours at moft."

For such beneficence there was no possibility of returning thanks; but their hearts spoke through their eyes, in a language sufficiently intelligible to his. Departing directly to save both himself and them the pain of pursuing a conversation that grew too distressful, he went without regard to change of dress or appearance, to look for a proper lodging for them, where he laid in such provisions of every kind, as he knew they must immediately want. This care employed him till the time he had promised to return, when he found such an alteration in the looks and appearance of them all, as gave his heart delight.

H 2

" You

home)
hom
hot, in
ly to

fery,

of

ry

O

to

34-

m-

he

hat

ie?

us

fa-

on-

give

in,"

that

d to

ough

"You fee, Sir," (faid the mother, as foon as he entered) " the effects of your bounty; " but do not think that vanity has made us

desc

they

rece

not

ce is

of to

hear

" g

" of

" th

" fe

" uj

" m

to m

" fu

" ex

" of

" pa

often

but f

nothi

misin

mind

what

havin

to fli

ter's

her fa

" abuse it. These cloaths, what we could raise on which has for some time been our

" fole support, were the purchase of happier

st times; and were now redeemed for much " less than we must have given for the worst

" we could buy."-

s os liw I w (1strom "Dear, madam," (interrupted my mafter, taking her hand respectfully) " mention of not any thing of the kind to me, I be-" feech you. You will foon fee fuch times " again." - Then turning to her husband, "I have taken a lodging, Sir; (continued he) it is convenient, but not large, as I imagined would be your choice. I will " call a coach to take us to it directly. " there are any demands here, let the people of the house be called up, and they shall 66 be paid. I will be your purse-bearer for " the present."

" No, Sir," (replied the husband) "there are not any. You have enabled us to difcharge all demands upon us. People in

" our circumstances, cannot find credit, be-

" cause they want it." ways to recome

My mafter would then have gone for a coach, but the daughter infifted on faving him that trouble; upon which he put the whole family into it, and walked away before them to their new lodging. It is impossible to describe noc

у;

us

uld

our

oier

uch

orst

naf-

ion

be-

mes

nd,

ued

s I

will

If

ple

hall

for

nere

dif-

in

be-

or a

him hole

nem to

ribe

149 describe what these poor people felt, when they faw the provision he had made for their reception. The father, in particular, could not bear it, but finking into a chair, " This " is too much!" (faid he, as foon as a flood of tears had given vent to the fullness of his heart) "This is too much. Support me, " gracious Heaven, who has fent this best " of men to my relief, support me under " the weight of obligations, which the pre-" fervation of these alone (looking round " upon his wife, and children) could induce " me to accept."-Then addressing himself to my master, " My heart is not unthank-" ful (continued he) but gratitude in fuch " excess as mine, where there is no prospect " of ever making a return, is the fevereft " pain."

My master, who fought none, attempted often to give the conversation another turn; but finding that they could speak or think of nothing else as yet, he took his leave, promising to come the next day, when their minds should be better settled, to consult what more was in his power to ferve them, having first privately taken an opportunity to flip a couple of guineas into the daughter's hand, to avoid putting the delicacy of her father and mother to farther pain.

END OF THE FIRST BOOK.

what their poor people felt, when in the providing he had enade for their blook all spring to them of the vectors the I were thinking into a chair. "I als' Lost a se copt et . . that . " I som es a feel wars had given vent to the fall els of his . . . The is too ende. Support reracidos Ileaven, who has teat that Colt I men at my relet, toppoer 'the lader the waight of obligation, which the pre-Davoi prinider mola sissi to no avay e god na ve e, zoo shiideen roulf adeer my reaffer, " MY beart is not untitalis-Ham hi shopars the late begaines to excels as mine, where there is no profesco Totavol oct al record a validate tens la

'v in it. ... who fought none, attempted a to give the convertation another tain; in himsing that view could fpeak or think of the graph of come and next day, what there is a better verticed to contain that more was in his power to lerve vertically laken an opportunally of the hand, to avoid purting the contact of thinks and mother to fartner paint.

Ext of the Links Boom,

H Jew CHRY

S

ond bas ons

-01

- 718

*** (1) d (1) d (1) d

CHI R ca in

ea in

Mar.



M. O. LASY MI

CHRYSAL:

has percled a OR; THE details and

moleywood bas figure at Chall it.

ADVENTURES

-mach from the equivalence are followed as the following

G and U & II a Nichbe Eas a.A.

BOOK II.

essent in his carliest yours, to give him to see an education and A him to

CHRYSAL gives some account of his master.

Reason of his having been bred to, and miscarried in a particular profession. Interesting remarks on the different kinds of merit necessary to eminence in different professions, confirmed by striking instances of their success in each. Natural consequence of his being forced into a profession against his inclination. He is H 4.

Itw the provision he had proble felt, when the provision he had pade for shelf effort. The fitter in particular, could can be also a chair, foods as it and the provision of the same a chair. I as a final canada a chair is an analysis of his canada a chair she will est of his canada a chair she will est of his canada a coor she will est of his canada a coor she will est the felt men at my relet, support who and relet along to be seen at the coordinates along tooking tought me to accept. — I hen address could medeet my relet, sominaed he but gracuade in such the continued he but gracuade in such certs as mine, where there is no probect the ever massing a return in the correct.

y intains, who lought none, attempted and to give the convertation another tain; in thing that ever could freak or think or think or think or think or think or integer to come the took his leave, oroning to come the next day, what their nates thould be better taitled to confust what more was in his power to serve them. I want first privately taken an opportunity to this a couple or gainess into the daughter's hand, to avoid pureing the centrary of the faither and mother to farther pairs.

Eve of the Frant Book;

Cologo and Hesper wo CHRY:

ST

one bod

-97

;00

G

5 b

oi a

CH I

n ne

ea in

Ser.



CHRYSAL:

the cobsult a.H.T :,NO g before, and

motorybod has begun at Chair i

ADVENTURES

- more than the spot size of the final

G and U I I I Nicht Eor a.A.

described of looking, back to investe described.

BOOK II.

eppoyered in his carticit youth, to give him.

CHRYSAL gives some account of his master.
Reason of his having been bred to, and miscarried in a particular profession. Interesting remarks on the different kinds of merit, necessary to eminence in different professions, confirmed by striking instances of their success in each. Natural consequence of his being forced into a profession against his inclination. He is the second-

compelled by distress to exert bis abilities. Contradictions in his character, and the particular turn of his works accounted for. He visits his new family. Affecting story of an officer.

ATIGUED in mind and body, from the debauch of the evening before, and the height to which his tenderest passions had been wound up by such a moving scene, my master went directly home, and throwing himself on a bed, slept till next morning, without disturbance from pain or ressection.

The contradictions, which I had seen in his character prompted my curiosity to take this opportunity of looking back to his past life, to try if in the occurrences of that I could trace their cause. Born in the middle rank of life, his parents were induced by the dawnings of uncommon genius, which he discovered in his earliest youth, to give him such an education, as might enable him to make that figure in some of the learned professions, for which paternal fondness slattered them, that nature had designed him.

But however greatly he profited by his education, the end proposed by it was far from being pleasing to his inclinations, which the vigour of his mind, and body turned to more active scenes. For this reason, when he was to quit the pursuits of general learning

his fpin ena

anx was or g all ferv tho of

mar

reim
to y
In c
upo
is ca
nece
of t
cafe
that
his c
trou
prof
can
fucce

vour

not

ing for those of some particular profession, his ardour cooled, and he entirely lost that spirit of emulative ambition, which alone can enable a man to arrive at eminence.

Such a falling-off could not escape the anxious observation of his friends, but as it was not in their power either to remedy it, or gratify his inclination in any other way, all they could do was to enter him into the service of religion, a profession in which though the greatest abilities and application of the human mind, are evidently and indispensibly necessary, yet by the perversion of

man, the leaft are required.

0

n

You feem shocked at the feverity of this remark; but a moment's reflection will open to you the reason upon which it is founded. In every other profession, success depends upon an opinion of that knowledge, which is called merit in it, because mankind see the necessity of such merit to attain the object of the profession. But in the church, the case is quite different. Every man thinks that he knows enough of religion to ferve his own turn, and therefore gives himself no trouble about the knowledge of those, who profess it, as he concludes that knowledge can be of no service to him; and therefore success in the church depends not on a general opinion of merit, but on particular favour, which, for the reason given before, is not the necessary consequence of such merit. H 5 An

An attorney, on surgeon, for instance, who is not thought to have some merit in his profession, will never be employed; but let him by any means get into the church, and curry favour with those in power, and he may rise to the first dignities of it, though he has no more merit in this profession, than he had in that, which he was forced to quit for want of bread. And this is the reason, why they who have least abilities for any profession are packed into this; and why they again, who have the least of these, are generally most successful in it; as consciousness of their want of merit makes them take most pains to gain favour.

The consequence of his entering into such a profession against inclination are obvious. An indignant sense of his own natural superiority to his superiours in station made him fall into the too common errour of arguing from the abuse, against the use, and hold in contempt not only them, but also the very profession itself, in which they could have fuch fuccess, and in which necessity alone obliged him to continue. He disdained to apply abilities, which he thought above the end! He neglected duties, which he faw abused; and at length sunk into a state of liftless indifference, in which he would have died in obscurity, had not diffress rouzed him, and extorted an exertion of his abilities, which a mind foured by disappointment

m aff ble

im duc of aco ciou tion men have fo 1 grea to I thou ly to whic his b can b fharp by gi nour. made wine, often ment his pri

cause c

ed, for

ment of its earliest hopes, and by domestick unhappiness after, turned to satire, with an asperity and strength, that made vice tremble in the bosom of the great, and folly hide

her head in the highest places.

As this domestick unhappiness was the immediate cause of those parts of his conduct, which contradicted the general tenour of his character, justice requires that some account should be given of it. In the capricious levity of youth, he fixed his inclinations on a female, who had no other recommendation beside beauty. Prudence would have forbidden a match, in which there was fo little prospect of happiness, but men of great abilities too often think it beneath them to liften to her voice. He married her, though, in the phrase of the world, evidently to his ruin, the return she made him for which proof of his love, was infidelity to his bed. This is the deepest wound that can be given to an heart of any delicacy; it sharpens the sting of ingratitude with infult, by giving a preference, that reflects dishonour. He felt it so severely, that despair made him strive to drown the sense of it in wine, in the intoxication of which, he too often was guilty of what in a cooler moment his reason would have blushed at, and his principles abhorred; and this was the chief cause of that diffress also, which as I observed, forced him to exert his abilities, which H 6 he

d

ÿ

e

e

one

W

re

d

i-

t-

nt

he did with fuch fuccess, as foon enabled him to quit a profession, that had not been his choice, and at the fame time indulge the natural disposition of his heart, by practifing

some of the sublimest duties of it.

As foon as he awoke next day, he went to visit his new family, where the happiness, that glistened in every grateful eye, at his approach made him happy. After some general chat, "It is my duty, Sir, (faid the " father) to give you some account of my-" felf, and of the cause of my falling into " that depth of misery, from which your " beneficence relieved me, that you should " not think it has been lavished on objects " altogether unworthy of it. . "I am descended from a good family, " the fortune of which my father diffipated in supporting a parliamentary interest, for " the ministry, the only return he received so for which, and for his voice upon all occase fions, was a small penfion for himself, and " a pair of colours in the guards for me, " his only fon, with promifes indeed of fares ther provision, which were all forgotten when he died, happily for himself before " the end of the parliament, which as he

" would have left him at the mercy of " creditors, whom it was not in his power

" had no prospect of being returned again,

" to pay.

Though

61

46 a a

se f cc 1

" I

" ir

ec ir

« A « O

" 0

" I

66 W

- 66

cc tl " g

44 V

" m

ic W

" th

46 b

66 W

oc h

" at

ce in

ec m e ti

44 W

« pi

" tie

" W

"Though I was soon sensible that my best hopes died with him, I was so infatuated to a profession, the most pleasing to youth- ful idleness and vanity, that I laid out the little fortune of this best of women, whom I had married in my days of better hope, in the purchase of a company, in a marching regiment; at the head of which I stated myself, that I should meet some opportunity, in the war just then broke out, of meriting further promotion. But

" I found the vanity of fuch a thought, " when it was unhappily too late. " After several years careful service, in " the course of which I had sealed some de-" gree of reputation with my blood, in fe-" veral warm actions, without advantage to " myfelf, or prospect of any to my family, " who now multiplied the cares of life ten " thousand fold upon my head, I was driven " by despair to exchange my company, " which I had bought, and therefore could " have fold again, the price of which would " at least have kept us from absolute starv-" ing, for an higher rank in a younger regi-" ment, just then ordered upon an expedi-" tion, the object of which raised, what " was thought rational expectation of fuch " profit, as should ease me from the anxie-" ties that made life a burden.

n

e

h

"Allured folely by this expectation, I went accordingly. The expedition was fuc"cefsful.

CHRYSAL: Or, the

" cessful. I did my duty. I was wounded " in the course of it, to the extream danger " of my life. I entirely ruined my confti-" tution by the severity of the climate; and on my return home was reduced to halfpay, without receiving fo much prize-" money, as defrayed the extraordinary ex-" pences of the expedition, and of the illness, which I contracted in it; while those " above me accumulated fuch wealth, as if " divided in any degree of proportion, would " have recompensed the labours of us, who " had literally borne the beat, and burden " of the day, and were now pining in dif-" content and mifery, aggravated by a parc tiality fo feverely injurious " In this fituation, I refolved to throw

" myfelf at the feet of my Sovereign, and im-

" plore relief from the known goodness of

" his heart. But his throne was furrounded by those, whose interest it was to keep the

" cries of his people from coming to his es ears *; and therefore, as it was necessary

" for me, to make my errand known, I never

" could obtain access to him.

"The diffress of this disappointment was " ftill farther heightened by the delays in

" the discharge of that balf-pay, which was

" now my only support; and the draw-backs

" it

es it

Se ev

cc wh " to

es to

" wh

ce fat

" fca

" H

cc far

" CO

" go

" an

ce tir

" ou

" fo

" m

"a

" in

" le

" fe

" el

" tw

" po

" us

W W

" lu

" th

« ca « or

" liv

46

^{*} This reflection, NOTORIOUSLY SO GROUNDLESS, is alone Sufficient to windicate the authour from any aliufion to prefent times.

it was subject to from the fees of office, even when it should come to be paid, which were fuch, that when I attempted " to mortgage it, the wretch's last resource, " to put off starving as long as he can; " what I could get from those vultures, who " fatten upon the fufferings of a foldier, was " fcarce fufficient to fatisfy our present wants: " How then could I look forward for a " family, dearer to me than life? What " could support resolution, when hope was " gone? Mine was unequal to the trial; " and I was beginning to meditate on put-" ting an end to a life of fuch mifery, with-" out confidering that the fufferings of those, " for whom I felt fo much more than for " myfelf, must be still made heavier by such " a base desertion of them, when heaven " in its mercy visited my family with a vio-" lent fever, which freed me from farther " fears for the future welfare of my three " eldest fons, and with difficulty spared the " two, whom you fee before you. O! my "poor boys! happy! thrice happier than " us, whom you left behind! Excuse this " weakness, Sir! nature will force the invo-"luntary tear in spite of reason; for were " they not the children of my love? "During their illness, I lost every other

"Care in my attendance upon them; nor omitted any possible means to preserve lives, for which my sears foreboded no-

" thing

"thing but unhappiness; but though their deaths freed me from a part of those fears, they left a melancholy void in my heart, which was more painful, if possible, than any fear. But I was not long sensible of that pain. My children were scarce laid in the grave, when the fever seized my-felf with such violence, that I soon lost my senses, nor recovered them for above a month; and then only to feel the greatest methodologis, that was ever heaped upon human creature.

The expence of my children's, and my own illness had not only exhausted all the

"The expence of my children's, and my own illness had not only exhausted all the money I had raised on the anticipation of my half pay, but also obliged my wife to mortgage several of our best effects. Such a resource never escapes the watchful eyes of people who keep lodging-houses. Our landlady no sooner perceived it, than she seized upon the rest, and then turned us out, the moment I could be removed without instant death.

"In this situation, I must have perished in

"the street, had not a poor woman, whom my wife had been obliged to call in to her assistance when I sickened, shared with us her habitation, in which you found us, as she also did the earnings of her daily labour, till a chairman who was carrying a beau to a ball, threw her down with such violence, for not making haste enough

CC W

" up

" we

" tio

" cal

" rel

" wh

" fhe but

" her

" yea

" the

" hor

" der

" whi

" crea

" ben

" out of his way, that she broke her leg, and "was obliged to be taken to an hospital."

From that time we supported life by " mortgaging the few cloaths we had brought' " upon our backs, without one ray of hope " to tempt us to look forward, till they also " were all gone, and the mifery of cold " added to that of hunger. In this condi-" tion, we had been two days without tast-" ing bread, or feeling the warmth of fire, " calling inceffantly upon death to put that " end to our diffresses, which a fense of " religion, made stronger by my wretched-" ness, now prevented my daring to haften, " when my daughter stole out unknown to " us to feek for charity in the streets, where " fhe wandered without meeting any thing " but infults, and follicitations to vice, till " heaven directed your steps to her. amod

"Such was the reward of more than twenty years faithful and hard fervice, in which "I had fought the battles of my country, in the opposite extremities of the globe, with honour, and been instrumental in making "princely fortunes for the several comman-

" ders, under whom I ferved.

"This, Sir, is the sum of my story, in which I have been as brief as I could, to avoid giving you pain. We are now your creatures. The lives we enjoy are immediately the gift of your benevolence; a benevolence, so critically timed, (for we could

" could not have subsisted many hours longer " without it) as to raise an hope, that Pro-

" vidence which fent you to our relief, will

" not leave its work unfinished, but save us

" from falling again into fuch mifery, by

" means agreeable to its own wisdom and

" goodness, though impossible for us, in our prefent fituation, to foresee 21 of bebli

It was some time before my master, who had liftened to the officer's ftory, with fympathetick attention, was able to speak. Recovering himfelf at length, "Fear not;" (faid he, in a broken voice) " never was the

" righteous forfaken; nor-nor-nor-. I

"have some friends, Sir, who may serve! -"In the mean time take this (reaching him

" a bank-note for twenty pounds) I will

on not be refused! business calls me for a few

" hours ; but I will fee you again in the " evening."-Saying this, he hurried away

to hide his emotions without waiting for a reply, which indeed their gratitude left them

not the power to make many and oppo on

nonger, and been infliremental in making princely forcures for the (breral commanders, under whom I lerved.

"This, Sir, is the fund of my flory, in " which I have been as brief as I could, to

" avoid giving you pain. We are now your

creatures. The lives we enjoy are inime-CHAP.

blood 12

CHE

ac b

ti th

> 47 of

12

an 972 ch

been mine THE direc

it wa ftanc relief

H choly

. .

could foesk a but when at length the did

r

.

11

y

di

r

0

4

-

99

le

I

m

11

W

ne

2

m

P.

have have been expeded.

CHRYSAL's master carries him to visit an old acquaintance, who behaves in character, on hearing the officer's story, and surprizes Chrysal's master with an account of his having turned Patriot. The general motive for such a step; with some remarks on the difference between practice and profession, in different instances. Insignificancy of private characters in attacks upon a ministry, and why. Reslections on the origin, and use of satire, and the abuse of the terms good and ill-nature, with the reason why so many cry out against satire. Chrysal

THE most intimate acquaintance my master had, was the person, who had been competitor with a former master of mine, for admission into the bigher order of THE MOCK-MONASTRY. To him he went directly, and relating the officer's story, while it was still warm on his heart, asked his assistance to do something more effectual for his relief.

His friend was fo affected with the melancholy tale, that it was some time before he

[·] Vol. 3 .- Page 237.

46 U

cc T

46 E

66 e

" 0

cc t

cc t

66 f

doz

" 0

" e

" a

" 8

16 j

" y

. 66

ee 1

44 f

66]

" e

2061

cc a

ee f

" n

cc t

...

er d

ee C

could speak; but when at length he did, it was in a strain very different from what might have have been expected. "And the " girl was really fo pretty!" (faid he, with a look of inexpressible archness) " Well said, " my good Levite. I prefume you fatisfied your own appetites with her at the tavern, before you provided for those of her fa-" mily, though you funk that part of the " ftory, for fear I should want to come in " for a fnack with you. The concupiscence " of you parsons is truly carbolick, whatever " your consciences may be, and would en-" gross the whole fex, if it was not restrained; not indeed that women come within " the meaning of the Mortmain acts; as " none do more good in their generation; " and consequently are better represented to " the state, than those who are occupied by " the clergy." "Why, what a fenfual brute must you

"Why, what a fenfual brute must you be, (answered my master) to talk of satisfying appetites with a wretch just perishing of cold and hunger. But it is all affectation. If you had been in my place, you would have acted just as I did; for whatever airs your wicked wit may assume, I know your heart is strongly susceptible

blude " upon

" upon all occasions; and indeed if it will really cover fins, as they say, they are in the right to have it ready, for multitudes enough they have to take up every corner of it. But why can you not throw off the cant along with the cloth? However, that her hunger should not damp your de-

" fires any more, here" (giving him half a dozen guineas) " is my help to allay it."—

"I will not refuse your money, for your own sake, in hope that your bestowing even this much so well may help to atone for some of the thousands you have thrown away. But it was not with any view of getting it, that I spoke to you. Their immediate necessities are supplied. I want your affistance and interest?

"My interest! Hah! hah! hah! -- You "apply to a person of great interest truly."

" Why my very naming them would be "fufficient to ruin their hopes for ever."

"You don't know perhaps, that I have turn"ed patriot, and attacked the ministry."-

"Patriot! For heaven's fake how long; and on what occasion have you taken this

" ftrange whim?"

"Whim! Pray, good Sir, speak with "more respect of the noblest principle of the human heart. The thought came into my head the night before last; and as I do not love to lose time, especially in things "of such moment, I gave it vent yester-

" day,

463/1

" P

... y

cc W

669W

4014

15510

SUG

" is

. seqw

(ffeff)

1197

50 b

et W

ec b

" a

« la

cc ar

" al

" th

· cc in

" pl

" ef

. coth

....66

"day, in the shape of a political pamphlet, " in which I have proved to a demonstra-"tion, that the minister and all his friends, " and country-men are fools, and rogues, " and deserve to b chang'd."-"Is it possible, that you can be ferious! What in the name of common fenfe, could " be your motive for taking fuch a ftep as "this? I thought you had expectations of Maryour from them. " outer son live What motive should any man of ho-"nour and honesty have, but the good of his country; their neglect of which has " rouzed an indignation that will make them Steremble? es offort I sens ist guines "Or, in other words, they have disappoint-" ed your expectations, and therefore you take this method of being revenged on " them, and extorting for fear, what they " would not do from favour; the general "motive of modern patriots I acknowledge; but with what face you can pretend to the " title, prostituted as it is, I can not think,

"Pray, how fo, reverend and grave Sir?
"If the most profligate finner makes the

" as your very name is a burlefque upon

" best faint, as you fay, why should not a

"moderate rake make a tolerable politician?
"I believe you will hardly attribute it to

" the fuperiour excellence of the latter cha-

" racter; but the truth is, though it is im-

Adventures of a GUINEA. 167

"possible for me to profess political princi"ples more contrary to my practice, than
"your moral practice is to your preaching,
"yet you would deny me the toleration
"which you avail yourself of, and have my
"words judged from my actions; not my
"actions, from my words, as you expect
"your own that be as a good expect

"But my private character, or practice "fignifies nothing to this underraking, which " is to rip up the practices, and characters "publick and private, of a let of people, "who have obtruded themselves into a stastion, that exposes them to envy, and every "acculation against whom will therefore " be received implicitely, without regarding " who, or what the authour of it is. Not " but there is fufficient room to attack thefe, " whose whole private lives have been such " a continued feries of vice and folly, and " their publick conduct of blunders and vil-" lainy, that it is impossible to fay or think " any thing bad enough of them, as I have " already proved by incontestible instances in " my pamphlet, and shall by many more in " the course of the undertaking. If the tables " indeed should turn, and I get into their " place, then they may make the fame use " of my character, and perhaps not without " effect; but at present it is quite out of "the question. And now that I have open-

f

u

1

n

0

CHRYSAL: Or, the 168

" ed myfelf to you, I expect your affiftance, "in return for my confidence."-Affiltance in politicks! It is not in my " power to give you any. I hate from my " foul, every political fystem under the fun, as a jumble of folly and villainy, (I mean " as they are carried into practice, not in their " speculative plans) and therefore never could "throw away a thought upon them."-"That lignifies nothing. The affiftance " which I want, you are well qualified to " give. While I detect their political blun-" ders and villainy, you shall lash their pri-" vate vices and follies, till we make them equally ridiculous and odious, to every " man of fense and virtue, in the nation; a " task that will give you the pleasing oppor-" tunity of indulging that misantbropy, which " inspires the muse of a satirist, and is mis-" taken for virtue, because it rails against " vice; for blazon it out as pompoully as " you will, nothing but ill-nature can make " a man take delight in exposing the defects " of others; and the more forcibly he does 56 it, the more powerful must that principle " be with him. " And by the same rule, it is good-nature " that makes a man fawn upon folly, and " flatter vice; and consequently whoever

"does it, is virtuous. A most judicious " way of reasoning truly! now, on the con-" trary, I think it a much more just conclu-

" fion,

" fior

" nel

" tice

" exp

" det

" thr

" ren

" All

" the " the

" ord " the

s fati

" An " nat

" pro

" who " agr

" wil " vic

" the

" or I

" tati " may

" and " I ne

" refe " con

" dut

" wh

Voi

· E

pra

ny

ny

ın,

an

eir

old

-

ce

to

n-

ri-

m

ry

r-

ch if-

ılt

as

ke

es

re

br

er

us

1-

u-

VOL. IV.

" fion, that they who treat vice with tender-" ness approve in their hearts, and would prac-" tice it, if they could; and that they, who " expose its deformities, and dangers, really " detest it, though they may sometimes, " through human weakness, fall into the " practice. But I do not wonder at your " remark; it is an old, and common one. " All, who are conscious that they deserve " the lash, desire to lessen its force; and " therefore derive fatire from ill-nature, in " order to obviate the application of it to "the proper object; and fasten upon the " fatirist the fault, which is in themselves. " And this abuse of the terms good and ill-" nature, is the reason, why some have been " provoked to call the former folly. "But not to waste time in discussions, " where prejudice only can find a doubt, I " agree to your proposal with pleasure, and " will hold folly up to ridicule, and brand " vice for deteltation, wherever you point " them out to me, without regard to the rank, " or power of the person; or to any impu-" tations of misantbropy, and ill-nature, which " may be levelled at myself, to shield against, " and blunt the edge of my fatire; though " I no more expect that I shall be able to " reform the moral, than you the political " conduct of the age. However, it is a " duty to make the attempt, be the fuccefs " what it will. But by the bye, are you

66

66

66

66

66

66

66

66

-13

66

. ..

46

"

the

and

or not apprehensive, that your undertaking may be attended with danger? The peoof ple in power will certainly be provoked; " and power, you know, has long arms, and will often reach over the fences of " law." "I fear them not! I have friends, who " are able and will defend the laws in me, " while I keep within their fence; one of " the principal of whom, I expect every er minute to call upon me, to communicate " matter, and confult upon another stroke .-"Then I'll take my leave. You'll have " things to talk about, which you will not defire me to hear. Conspirators against " the state, always chuse privacy."-" Conspirators against the state! Our con-" fpiracy, if fuch you call it, is for the state, " against its worst enemies, traitors to the " trust reposed in them, and fools to their own true interest, as members of the comer munity."-" All this I'll grant; and yet it is well, if " they do not find means, to make themec selves pass for the state, and of course, you for the traitors against it. They, who " have the power, can eafily affume the de name.

As he said this, a servant brought his friend a note, who upon casting his eye over it, "The gentleman I expected (said he) writes me word, that he is not very well this

" this morning, and therefore defires to fee " me at his house. If you are going my

" way, I'll set you down."

ng

0-

d;

ns,

of

ho

ne,

of

ry

ate

ve

ot

nft

n-

te,

the

eir

m-

, if

m-

rle, ho the

his

ver

ne)

reil his "I thank you!" (answered my master)

"But my ambition does not rife fo high as " that yet. I do not aspire to a pillory, or

" a prison, even in the cause of my coun-

" try. Shall we fee you at dinner?"-

"Most certainly! but hold. Can you give " me change, for this note? I have not time

" to call upon my banker."-

"I believe I can; but then it must be with the help of what you have yourfelf

" given me, for the officer; like other ban-

" kers, who make a parade of taking in

" charitable subscriptions, at the same time

" that they support their credit with the " money."-

"That's right! I'll mention him to the

" person I am going to. He has abilities " to serve him effectually; and I am fatis-

" fied, never wants inclination to do a gene-

" rous action."- My master then gave him the change of his note, among which I was,

ave fallicient religion to added to a fall fall-Buck would be enterely ruled by he and his

ere than political and and absolute annion

an oppique at guilt governoon havely extran

and took his leave.

XXXXXXXXXXXXXXXXXXXXX

CHAP. III.

CHRYSAL Sums up the character of bis late master. Different opinions for and against the propriety, and benefit of SATIRE. The former supported by good authority. Reason of some inconveniences attending the indulgence of such a turn. Character of CHRY-SAL's new master concluded from a former sketch. He waits upon his Patron. Charatter of him, with his metives for such a patronage. He gives striking reasons for objecting to some parts of CHRYSAL's master's pampblet, which the other makes some weak attempts to vindicate. CHRYSAL's master enjoys the pleasure of tracing his own fame. Bistin and Landid

ter made me feel regret, at leaving his fervice, till I should see more of him. His abilities did honour to the age, and country in which he lived; and the exalted sentiments of virtue, which broke from him spontaneously, in the genuine essuince of his soul, gave sufficient reason to judge, that his conduct would be entirely ruled by it, and his talents exerted in the more pleasing and extensive way of recommending it to imitation by diplaying all its advantages, and charms,

a

ti

m

it

it

0

as foon as time should cool the servour of his passions, and apply its lenient balsam to the fores in his heart, the smart of which first gave him that poignant turn, and drove him, for relief to excesses, that too often drowned his better reason, and led him into actions, which in a cooler moment he abhorred. In a word, his failings were the luxuriance of nature, as his virtues were her perfection.

As I have faid that he turned his poetical vein particularly to fatire, I fee your curiofity to know my opinion of the propriety, and benefit of that manner of applying the powers of wit. But I have often told you, that I am not permitted to determine controverted points. Many with a plaufible appearance of good-nature decry it, as proceeding from a malevolence of disposition, and tending only to spread the influence of bad example by making it known, and harden people in vices, they might forfake if not made desperate by detection! Many with an appearance of virtuous indignation vindicate it, as terrifying from vice, by shewing it in its native deformity, and correcting folly, by putting it out of countenance; which latter opinion is supported by the authority of one of the most sensible, and best men of his age. *

But

Would the anachronism admit the sufposition, the editor should imagine that the a thour here meant the writer of LETTERS FROM A PERSIAN IN ENGLAND, &c. words

174 CHRYSAL: Or, the

But still the indulgence of this turn is attended with many inconveniences, and dangers, if it be not guided with the greatest care. That imaginary superiority, which the power of making another ridiculous or detested, slatters a man with, is so pleasing to the self love inseparable from human nature, that it requires uncommon moderation to restain from exercising it, upon improper occasions, and makes him presumptuously conclude, that whatever happens to displease himself in any particular, is a just object of publick ridicule, and censure. An errour, into which the impetuosity of my late master sometimes hurried him.

I have given you a sketch of the character of my new master upon a former occasion ‡; to which I have only to add here, that a wanton abuse of uncommon abilities inverted the end, for which they were given, making them disgraceful to himself, and dangerous to his country, a licentious pursuit of every thing called pleasure having wasted his fortune, and driven him to the despicable necessity of prostituting them to any purpose, that might promise to retrieve his assairs.

words are thefe, "If all the edge of wit is turned on those, who are justly the objects of ridicule, Wit is as great a benefit to PRIVATE LIFE, as the sword of the mogistrate is to PUBLICK. Letter 40.—

1 Vol. 111. page 239.

The

up

fic

CO

W

OV

en

in di

or

of

pr

no

to

hi

in

PE

ft:

ce

m

P

ft

m

W

ru

t-

n-

ft

e

e-

0

0

,

r

The gentleman, whom he went to wait upon, the morning I came into his possession, was one who had served his king, and country, with sidelity, and success, while he was permitted to follow the dictates of his own reason in their service; but gave up the empty and disgraceful appearance of acting in it, any longer, on finding his judgement disregarded, and himself designed to be made only a cypher, to encrease the consequence of another.

The indignation, however, which had prompted him to take this step, led him not into those unjustifiable lengths, which are too common, on fuch occasions. He was faithful to his Sovereign, though he had loft his favour; and watched attentively over the interests of his country, though he was not permitted to promote them. The only instance in which his conduct could possibly be cenfured was his patronizing fuch a man, as my master. But it is a maxim in human politicks, that the end justifies the means be they what they will. He wanted to be reflored to his former power; and thought this man's exposing the infufficiency of those who had supplanted him in it, the most likely way to effect that purpole.

To this defire of power he was not stimulated by the usual methods of repairing a ruined fortune, or making a new family. His wealth exceeded his very wishes; and he

already enjoyed the highest honours he could aspire to: all he proposed was the glory of his Sovereign, and the advantage of his country, which that enthusiastick ambition, from whence proceed the greatest actions, made him think himfelf the most capable, and wish to be the happy instrument of promoting.

By this gentleman, my mafter was received with that civility, which is commonly miftaken for esteem. After some general chat, on the occurrences and humour of the times, in which my mafter modeftly took to himfelf the merit of the people's discontent at the ministry, and their measures, as raised folely by his pamphlet, "I allow the good " effects of it (faid the gentleman) and great-" ly approve the principles upon which it is " written; but I much fear, that your zeal * has transported you too far. You should " of all things have avoided involving the " master, in your charge against the minifters; because that alone can give them " any advantage against you, and is there-" fore what they always feign, however un-" justly, when they are attacked, in order to " fcreen themselves behind him. Beside, " the character of a Sovereign is facred, and " should never be treated but with the highest " respect, especially when the virtues of the " man, are such as would be respectable in any " character."

(

.

Such disapprobation from his principal patron greatly disappointed my master, who was so little acquainted with his sentiments, as to think he bore resentment against his Sovereign for the loss of his favour, as well as against those, who had deprived him of it, and consequently would be pleased with any thing, that might seem to restect disgrace upon him.

Recovering himself however, before his embarrassement was perceived, "I imagined" (answered he, with his usual presence of mind)

"that it was impossible to accuse me of different to one, whom I have studiously

" fought every occasion of praising. As for

" what you take notice of, my charge is not

" personally against him, but through him,

" against those, who had the baseness and infolence to abuse his goodness, and confi-

" dence in such a manner; so that I think it

" is impossible to wrest it, to the purpose you

" apprehend."-

ild

of

n-

m

fh

vif-

it,

S,

n-

at

od

tis

al

d

ne

1-

m

2-

1-

0

2,

d

e

y

h

"I wish you may not be mistaken; but

" much fear that your argument will not have the weight you expect. Praise, given

with an air of irony is the keenest insult;

" beside, in this particular case, the praises

you bestow upon his goodne's are all at the

" expence of his understanding. However,

" do not be dispirited, at what cannot now

" be helped. As I think your intention was

es not in fault, you may depend upon my

15

coun-

" countenance, and support, let what will

al

re

n

te

tr

ar

po

CU

W

in

" happen."

This comfortable affurance restored my master to his former spirits: not desiring however to continue the conversation any longer upon that subject, "I have this morn-

"ing (faid he) made no inconfiderable ad-

" whose turn for satire I have heard you so

" much admire, has promised me to exert all his powers in our cause. He will at-

" tack the faults in their private, while I

" expose their publick characters, and ex-

perience has shewn that it is easy to over-

"turn the minister, when the man is made

" ridiculous, or odious."____

"The former I'll grant you; but we have too many instances in contradiction to the

" latter, to build much upon it. However,

"his powers are great, and may do much,

" if he will take care to avoid the rock upon

" which you have fallen; and therefore I

" shall be glad to attach him seriously to

" us, especially as he does not feem to be

" utterly void of virtue, notwithstanding the

" libertinism of his conduct in some in-

" ftances."

My master would not miss so favourable an opportunity of doing justice to the character of his friend. Accordingly he related the story of the distresses of the officer, and his family, and his generosity to them, in so affect-

affecting a manner, that the gentleman directly gave him a considerable sum of money, for their present relief, with a promise of providing for them himself, if he could not prevail upon those in power to do it.

y

t,

O

rt

-

I

1 -

-

e

e

e

,

n

I

0

e

e

Pleased with a success, which he knew would be so pleasing to his friend, my master took leave of his patron, and fet out to trace his own fame from one coffee-house to another, and enjoy the applauses, which the popularity and boldness of his attempt procured him from the multitude, wherever he went; after which he repaired to his usual haunt, where he dined, and spent the evening, in his usual manner.

老老果在来来来来来来看着老果在老果果果在来看来来

CHAP. IV.

CHRYSAL's master receives an unwelcome visit, at an unseasonable time. His extraordinary behaviour before his superiours. He is sent to prison. CHRYSAL makes some unpopular remarks, on certain interesting subjects. Consequences of his master's imprisonment, with. an account of his behaviour in it.

ONFIDENT as my master was of his fafety, he foon found that the fears of his patron were too just. He had scarce haid him down to fleep, when his bed was

fur.+

Surrounded and himself made a prisoner, by number of fellows, who under the fanction of authority committed all the outrages of lawless ruffians, breaking open bis locks, risting bis effects, and searching into all bis Secrets.

It was in vain for him to expostulate with fuch people against so flagrant injustice, or claim the protection of the laws. They derided him, and all he could fay; and having finished their work, dragged him away with insults and abuse, to a magistrate, where he had the comfort of waiting a confiderable time in fuch agreeable company, before his

worship was at leifure to fee him.

But this, though designed as an indignity, was of real advantage to him, as it gave him time to recover his spirits, and collect presence of mind for an interview of such importance. Accordingly when at length he was admitted, to the dread tribunal, instead of shewing any dejection at the danger, which feemed to hang over him, he behaved in a manner worthy of a better man, and a better cause. He afferted the violation of the laws, in his person, with so much resolution, and appearance of reason, and returned the insolence of office with such contempt, anfwering illusively to the insidious questions put to him, and boldly demanding that right of being restored to his liberty, which was affured to every individual of the community,

by the effential principles of the constitution, that his judges were startled, and more than once wished they had left him unmolested.

However, as there was no receding now, they concluded it to be their best way to go through with what they had begun, and bear down opposition with an high hand; with which intent they sent him directly to prifon, in defiance to all he could say, where he was treated with uncommon severity, and the method, which the law provided for his being restored to liberty, eluded as long as possible, by finesses which power only could

support.

by

ic-

tes

ks,

bis

th

or e-

g

th

le

is

e

£

h

d

a

I see your indignation at such an infringement of laws procured by the blood of myriads, and established by the most solemn engagements human and divine, for the security of the common rights of mankind. The part which every man feels in such sufferings, on a supposition that they may possibly one day fall upon himself, naturally interests you, as it did the multitude, in my master's cause. But when you come to examine coolly, the manner of his being taken into confinement, which is what gives you such offence, it will not appear so contrary to reason, and justice, the foundation, and as I may say, soul of all laws, as popular opinion may presume.

All power is delegated from the people for the mutual advantage of governours, and

governed.

governed. To support the use, and prevent the abuse of that power, laws are established by the consent of both, which are to be the rule of their actions. But as it is impossible for human wisdom to foresee, and provide for every occurrence that may happen, there is essentially implied in the first trust a further power of applying unprovided remedies, to unforeseen cases, for the safety, and advan-

tage of the whole.

If it be objected, that these remedies may fometimes be injurious to individuals, by being injudiciously, or wrongfully applied, the answer is obvious. The sufferings of a few, are not to be fet in competition with the fafety of the many. Beside, if the remedies were never to be applied, where there was a possibility of a mistake, the evil might happen, in the time necessary for enquiry and deliberation. For, though penal laws are defign'd only to prevent future by the punishment of past crimes; yet where such crimes, if committed, will exceed the reach of punishment, and defeat the laws, the power of prevention must be exerted earlier, to anticipate them before commission.

Without such a power, the trust of government would be imperfect, and inadequate to the end; as, if no punishment could be inslicted thus for prevention, but by prescribed forms, human ingenuity, ever most fertile in evil, would devise expedients to evade it,

till

till

1 1

ftat

mu

orc

nit

no

be

ba

of

wl

W

je

u

fil

it

0

d

ent

ed.

he

ole

de

re

r-

S,

1-

till perpetration should secure impunity, as I said before, perhaps to the ruin of the state.

For these reasons an extraordinary power must have been implicitely given, for extraordinary cases; or the good of the community, which is the end of government, cannot be obtained. If this power though should be abused, the sacred spirit of the laws of your bappy country will supply the inevitable defect of the latter, and grant redrefs to the fufferer, when a proper time comes for enquiring into the circumstances of the case; a redress which was not provided by the people +, the most jealous of their liberties of any who ever united themselves into civil society, who senfible of the necessity of such a resource, madeit a fundamental rule of their government. on any occasions of uncommon difficulty or danger to entrust the whole power into the hands of some one person, whom they called DICTATOR, as his word was to be the law, without subjecting him to controul in the use, or account for the abuse of it, when his power should be at an end.

As foon as my master's imprisonment was known, the populace all took fire. They made his cause their own. They looked upon him as a martyr in the darling cause of liberty. They insulted all government, and committed excesses every hour, infinitely more

⁺ The Romans.

illegal, and dangerous to liberty, than that

of which they complained.

In the mean time, his confinement was far from sitting so heavy upon him, as might have been expected. Tho' he wanted the approbation of his own mind, and the enthusiasm of the principles he professed, to support his resolution, and encourage him to look forward with hope, levity of temper supplied the place of that resolution, and saved him from sinking under missfortunes, by making him insensible of their weight. He rallied his jailors, mimicked his judges, cracked jests upon his own undoing, and turned every circumstance into ridicule, with such drollery, and unconcern, as if he was assing the imaginary sufferings of another, not actually suffering himself. How long he would have been able to support that spirit though came not to be tried.

Committee of the commit

en el superiori de la company de la company

will hadde the business.

med us namikinga silab alah

THE THE THE THE THE THE THE

hat

far

tht he en-

p.

to

per

nd

by

Te

k-

ed h

g

c-

d

h

CHAP. V.

CHRYSAL's master is visited in prison, by bis patron; and from what motives. His conduct, on being set at liberty, and the consiquences of it. Remarkable grounds on which he was set at liberty, with a conjecture at the reason of fixing upon them. CHRY-SAL makes an enquiry into certain matters, much talked of, and little understood.

S foon as his friends obtained access to him (for the great severity of his confinement was the uncommon strictness of it) his patron went to fee him. As I have taken notice of his disapprobation of what had brought my master into this scrape, you are furprized at his taking a step, that seemed fo inconsistent with his character. But bis motives for it did bonsur to the man, however strange they may appear in the politician. He had admitted him to a degree of personal intimacy. He had approved of his engaging in a cause, to which he was himself attached most fanguinely, and he scorned to desert him in diffress, occasioned by what he thought an errour of his judgement, not a fault of bis intention.

Beside the consolation to himself, the honour of such a visit was of the greatest advantage to my master's affairs; as it lightened the personal prejudices against him, and gave a good opinion of a cause, which appeared to have the countenance of such a man.

Intoxicated with the popularity he had thus acquired, which if rightly managed might have done great matters, he was no fooner at liberty, than he threw off all reftraint, and ran into fuch licentiousness, as in a short time lessened its force, and lost him every trace of the good opinion of all, who gave themselves time to think of the causes, and consequences of such conduct. But his triumph was not long-lived.

He had been restored to his liberty, not as a right common to all the members of the community, on a supposition of the illegality of the manner, in which he had been deprived of it; but in consequence of certain immunities, annexed to a particular part of the legislature, to which he belonged.

Though the abilities, and integrity of the magistrate, who made this distinction were unquestionable, some persons who looked farther than the present moment, imagined they could trace it to a cause, not commonly attended to. He had on former occasions been instrumental in depriving some people of liberty in the same manner; to have condemned

dem lega at the him have delifave those

to f

that very show the try end div und wh visi der

lon ceff hir cui 0-

1-

d

)-

a

d

0

S

187

demned that manner therefore now, as illegal, would have been condemning himself; at the same time, that upright obedience to the dictates of his present opinion, obliged him to set him free. Such a difficulty must have been distressing; but this distinction delivered him from it, and enabled him to save his credit, and conscience both; as those people had borne no part in the legislature, and therefore had not been entitled to such immunity.

I see your indignation arise, at the thought, that in a country which boasts of being governed by equal laws, any one set of men should enjoy immunities, denied to the rest; but that indignation proceeds from viewing the matter in a partial light. In the country where your lot has happily fallen, the end of government is better secured by a division of its powers, than in any other under heaven. The great wisdom of those, who made this division, appears in the provisions made to preserve each part in it, independant of the rest, the only means by which the division itself could be preserved.

Now as the executive power necessarily belongs solely to the prince, it was equally necessary to secure those, who bore a part with him in the legislative, from any undue execution of that power, which might be attempted in order to break through that independance, and join the legislative to the

executive;

executive; or in other words, vest both powers absolutely, and without limitation in the prince. And this was the reason of immunities, so much talked of, and so little understood.

If it be faid, that these immunities operate also against fellow-subjects, from whom there can be no fuch fear, and are fometimes (perhaps too often) abused to dishonest ends, the answer must be sought for in the depravity of the human heart, which will pervert the best institutions to the worst purposes, and makes it necessary to preclude every exception, that it should not be extended to serve them. As for instance, if the meanest subject of the state had a right to claim the affistance of the civil power in every case, against any member of the legislature, while in his legislative capacity, that right might be fuborned, or feigned by the executive power in fuch a manner, as to over-turn his independency, and prevent his discharging the trust committed to him: for which reason it is better that an individual should suffer (to fuppose the worst) than an opportunity be given for ruining the whole community; according to the known maxim, that an evil (which affects but one) is preferable to an inconvenience, (which affects many.) And this immunity, which is really the shield, and fafety of the state, can never be invaded, but from a defign against the liberty of the state, nor absolutely given up, without giving

righ whi To betv ous ext

ing.

flitt ext wh

deff

and diff fav

rer

the an it in ac cu

w

ne

ft

vers

nce.

fo

ate

ere

er-

the

ity

he

nd

p-

ve

b-

Ti-

ift

is

1-

in

1-

ft

is

0

e

.

il

-

Datte

ing up that liberty along with it; though the right may be waived in particular instances, which appear unworthy of the benefit of it. To actions, criminal in their own nature, between individuals, or immediately dangerous to the state, it was never designed to be extended, as in such cases it would have been destructive of the end, for which it was instituted.

While my master was running riot in this extravagant manner, some things happened which raised in his favour the indignation, and pity of many who disliked the man, and disapproved his proceedings, because they saw him persecuted by unjustifiable means.

It may well be imagined, that I did not remain long enough in his possession, to see the conclusion of this affair; but as I had ample opportunity of being acquainted with it at the time, and see that your curiosity is interested in the event, I will continue the account here, especially as the principal occurrences in my next service, were connected with it in so particular a manner, that it is necessary to explain one in order to understand the other.

hids included in it all, has see deprocess to be her her read to be a seed of the constitution of the constitution of the constitution of the constitution.

TO THE THE PROPERTY OF THE PRO

CHAP. VI.

CHRYSAL's master takes a foreign tour. Remarks upon national reflections, and attacks upon private characters. Chrysal's master is called to an account for certain improper liberties, by a very improper person, whom he treats with uncommon propriety. CHRYSAL makes some out-of-the-way reflections on a question much canvassed to little purpofe.

X7 HEN my master had in some meafure exhaufted the first flow of his spirits upon the recovery of his liberty, he made a fhort excursion abroad, as if meerly for amusement, but in reality to provide a place of retreat, in case of the worst, as his apprehensions could not but be alarmed, whenever he allowed himfelf time to think.

I have observed, that in the account he gave my late mafter, when he first told him of his attack upon the minister, he said he had included in it all, his country-men. This he really had done on that, and continued to do, on all other occasions with a licentiousness, unexampled; but which lost its force, and became contemptible, by finking into fcurrility.

Attacks

fo

pu

ca pr

tio

pu

an

A

wl

be

pa

ap

pr

tie fu

gr

pe

fe

tr

of th

of

ar

ar

ti

W

0

n

7

Attacks upon private characters, unless forced by necessity, or designed to serve good purposes, such as personal reformation, or caution to others, are literally abuse, and proceed always from a bad heart; but national reflections, as they can answer no good purpose of any kind, are abuse in every sense, and proceed equally from folly and malevolence. A folly indeed that is often punished by fools, who take to themselves that abuse, which belongs not to them in particular, and would pass by, without lighting upon them, if not

applied thus by themselves.

Re-

cks

as-

173-

on,

ty.

ec-

ile

13-

is

he

ly

is

d,

ie

m

e

is

0

My master had not been long abroad, when a countryman of the minister's thought proper to call him to account for the liberties he had taken with his country. The abfurdity of fuch a ftep in any man was still aggravated by the peculiar circumstances of this person, who had actually given weight to the feverest part of the charge against his country, (indeed the only part that would admit of weight, the rest being, as I have said, nothing but scurrility) by engaging in the service of the enemies of its present government, and fighting their battles against it. Such an antagonist therefore was beneath the notice of any man of reason, and accordingly. was treated fo, by my master, who on this occasion behaved with a moral propriety, and prudence, much above the tenour of his general character. But his enemies beheld his conduct

conduct in a different light, and attributed to cowardice what was really the effect of courage.

You feem surprized at my saying that his declining to fight was the effect of courage! but reflect a moment, and you will see that it is the motive of fighting, and not the mere fighting, that constitutes true courage; and that the fashionable courage of venturing life for punctilios of imaginary honour is real cowardice, as it proceeds solely from fear of the false censure of the world; and therefore, that to brave that censure in such cases is the

bigbest courage.

I would not be understood by this to declare absolutely against a man's fighting in his own cause, in all cases indiscriminately. Different circumstances make an essential difference in things which superficially appear to be alike. A man's venturing his life, as I have said, in vindicating empty punctilios of imaginary bonour, or in support of injustice, is the highest, and most ingrateful insult to the authour of that life, who has made the preservation of it the first principle of action, and consequently an indispensible duty, when it can be preserved without violation of those greater duties, which he has thought proper to prescribe.

But as there are other things more valuable than life, because without them life would lose its value, reason, which is the voice of heaven, permits to hazard the lesser

this fere

to j whi law rece the doe and met his can

by a fubj man show mod

pro

COL

foul virt disp the its o

good

good for the preservation of the greater, and this is the justification of war between different states.

S

t

H

f

e

S

)

I

f,

To prevent the evils, which such a recourse between individuals in the same state. must be attended with, laws are established to preserve those rights, and redress injuries, which they may offer to each other; to these laws therefore it is an indispensible duty to recur for fuch redress and preservation, where they are able to effect them: but this duty does not feem to extend fo far as absolutely and indifcriminately to preclude the other method of a man's striving at the hazard of his life to effect them himself, when the laws cannot do it, as is too often the case, it being impossible for human wisdom to make provision for every occurrence, which in the complication and extensiveness of human action may require it.

An opinion, so contrary to that professed by all, who have undertaken to discuss this subject, however consonant to the sense of mankind in general as shewn in their practice, should be supported by the plainest, and

most convincing reasons.

A good name is the immediate jewel of the foul; it is the first fruit, and the reward of virtue: the preservation of it therefore is indisputably worth hazarding life for, where the laws have not sufficiently provided for its defence; as is the case, in many of the Vol. IV.

most delicate, and tender points. If a man for instance, is unjustly accused of a fact, that ruins his good name, at the fame time, that the accusation comes not within the reach of any law, from which he may receive redress, can reason say, that he is not justifiable in striving for that redress himself, and vindicating his good name, at the hazard of his life, when that life would be only mifery without it?

But here another difficulty occurs. Shall a man, it is faid, put himself upon a level with his injurer, and risque a second injury, in feeking fatisfaction for the first? This certainly is an evil, but must be submitted

to, to prevent a greater.

If a man were permitted to redress himfelf abfolutely, without fuch a rifque, the consequence would be, that partiality to himfelf would make him think every thing that fhould displease him, an injury sufficient to merit fuch a redrefs, whereby murders would be multiplied to the reproach of humanity, and ruin of the flate. But where this rifque makes the redrefs attended with danger, people are cautious not to run into it, but on what they at least think good grounds.

Beside, risquing life in an even scale is in fome manner staking it upon the justice of the cause, and appealing to heaven for decifion; and confequently fuccess clears the character in general estimation; whereas kill-

ing

V

ab

2

to

ftr

hu

in

po

lav

cri

un

abl

of

tha

cee

to fro

per

and

at l

ano just

have

der

ing infidiously, or without such equal risque only confirms the first charge, on a presumption of consciousness, and aggravates it with the weight of new guilt. And this was the sense of mankind, till the remedy was perverted to such an excess, as to become worse than the evil, and therefore necessary to be abolished, as far as human laws can abolish

a general principle of action.

is

d

n-

n-

at

to

ld

ty,

ue

0-

on

in of

de-

the

ill-

ing

One particular though in the laws made to abolish it, deserves remark; as it shews a firiking instance of the fagacity with which human laws are often made. Killing a man, in a deliberate duel, be the cause ever so important, and utterly unprovided for in the law is accounted murder, and made capitally criminal; but killing in a drunken broil, or ungoverned guft of paffion is only a pardonable offence, and called by the fofter name of man-flaughter! Now if the makers of that law had but confidered which action proceeded from the worst cause, and was liable to be attended with the worst confequences, from the possible frequency of it, they might perhaps have feen reason to reverse the case, and made the latter capital, and the former at least pardonable.

In a word, he who takes away the life of another, or loses his own, in a trivial, or unjust cause, or where the laws of his country have provided him redress, is guilty of murder; whereas he, who kills, or is killed in

K 2

a cause

196 CHRYSAL: Or, the

a cause of real importance, for which there is no remedy provided him by the law, fins not against the spirit of that law, however he may against the letter; and consequently seems to be intitled to an immunity from the penalties of it. This reasoning though respects only the reason of the law, and is by no means laid down as a rule for practice; it being the indispensible duty of a subject to obey the plain letter of the law, without presuming to oppose his private opinion to it, otherwise than by humble application to proper authority to have it altered.

CHAP. VII.

CHRYSAL's master's late conduct draws bim into a new scrape, in which he comes off but second-best. He takes advantage of his misfortune to make his escape from a greater. He suffers the resentment of his enemies, as far as they can reach him; and meets from his friends the sate of all useless tools, after having served them with improbable success. A striking instance of the advantage of an upright judge, and equal laws. Chrysal changes his service.

THE opinion, that my master's having behaved in this manner proceeded from a want of spirit, soon laid him under a necessity

all tu

C

of in gi

funda be dr

ha

this life ma

fly any bu

he

im wa

cessity of shewing the contrary. A person, who was involved deeper, than he chose to appear, in his acculations against the minifter, though he was known to be his creature, thought he might fafely invalidate the credit of the charge, and curry farther favour with his patron, by denying it in terms of fuch abuse, as should make the accuser infamous, on submitting to them, as he imagined he would.

But in this he found himself mistaken, The captiousness of false bonour, that often passes for true resolution which is only the refult of virtue, was now picqued; and two beings (for it was impossible for the other to draw back) who called themselves rational, hazarded their lives, in support of what nei-

ther could have supported by reason.

5

The event proved immediately unfavourable to my master, who received a wound, that for some time seemed to threaten his life. But he foon thought the danger amply made amends for, by the pretence it gave him to put off from time to time the refentment of that part of the legislature to which he belonged, for the offence which had occasioned his being confined, and at length to fly from it, when he found it could not be any longer prevented by fuch finesses, from bursting on his head. Such a flight was an implicite acknowledgment of his guilt. He was therefore deprived of his part in the legiflature, gislature, and consequently of all the immunities annexed to it, and given up to the common course of the laws, for that and other matters, whenever he should be found within the reach of their power. Nor was this all! to shew still stranger disapprobation of his conduct, the breach of those immunities, upon which the magistrate had founded his discharge from confinement, was over-looked, and such offences as his excluded from their protection for the suture.

You cannot be furprized at his meeting fuch a fate. The tools of a statesman however fuccessful they may have been, are always thrown afide with neglect, the moment they have done their work; but when they fail, however blamelefly, or run into any errour, though only from excess of zeal, the weight of the neglect is made still heavier, by heaping all the blame upon them. But what will you think, when I tell you, that unequal as he must appear to have been to fuch an attempt, in consequence, character, and abilities, he raised so threatening a storm, that the minister thought proper to retire out of its way; as all his friends apprehended they should have been obliged to follow him: a fuccess, for which he was in a great measure indebted to the affistance of my late mafter, who represented their private characters in fuch colours, in his fatirical writings, as will make their memories pay a dear

dea rits bra imi ftat is a

rits ed. in any and vil

tha

to me

me ide gr an

pu

ey

hi

ju

dear price for their power, the poetical merits of his works, in which their names are branded with indelible infamy, ensuring their immortality. Such is the basis, upon which statesmen found their greatness; and so easily is a jealous populace led away, by any thing.

that flatters their present humour.

I fay not this, as deciding upon the merits of the disputes in which he was concerned. I think too meanly of human politicks in general, to give my opinion in favour of any one scheme of them, in preference to another. They are all alike a jumble of villainy, and blunders. All I intend is, to shew on what a sandy foundation, men who value themselves upon their wisdom, wear out their lives in anxious toils, and dangers, to build their hopes; and what unworthy means are often made use of to overturn them, and work ends, reputed great, on purpose perhaps to humble man, in his own eyes.

As for my master, he was no sooner removed out of the sight of the mob, whose idol he had been in such an extravagant degree, than he was entirely out of their mind, and the storm he had raised subsided so totally, as to leave no other trace behind it, but

his ruin.

u-

ne

br

br

as

a-

1-

d

35

1-

g

-

1-

ıt

y

-

e

,

t

t

,

V

e

I have observed your anxiety, to know whether he eyer obtained redress, for the injustice done him in his property; and the K 4 injurious

injurious treatment he received when he was first apprehended, as I said that the sellows employed to take him, had under the sanction of authority committed all the outrages of lawless russians. The interest, you take in the cause of such a man, can arise from nothing but your love of justice, which should not be violated in the person of the most unjust. It will therefore give you pleasure to be informed, that the laws of your country never shone with brighter lustre, than in this instance.

In despite of every artifice, and effort which power and chicane could make use of to evade, or intimidate from, the execution of them (a striking instance of the latter of which was depriving his patron of every degree of power and honour, of which he could be deprived without regard to his great services, and personal consequence, only for appearing in his cause) An able and upright magistrate supported them with such resolution, and judgement, that he obtained exemplary redress for all he had suffered, that could be redressed, as did several others who had been involved in the same circumstances, as having been employed by him.

In gratification to your curiofity, I have thus given you the general heads of his story. To have dwelt on the minuter circumstances, however curious in themselves, would have led me too great a length, beside that they cha to t was

con

real

tula who resp stra

> play felf he l feh lifh

hin beg his upo

come

come not within my defign, as I was not directly in his possession, when they happened. To return therefore now to the regular chain of my own adventures, I must go back to the time of my leaving his fervice, which was not very long after he had been released from his confinement.

e

n

d

-

.

n

Among the crouds, that came to congratulate him upon this event, was a clergyman, whose professions of personal attachment, and respect for his principles, and abilities were strained to such a fulsome height, as would have difgufted vanity itself. The have have

My master saw through him directly, and played him off with humour peculiar to himfelf, till he concluded with telling him, that he had a work then in hand, upon the fame: feheme, with his, which he intended to pub-

lish by subscription. My master, who knew the man, took the hint, in the proper light of a modest way of begging, and clapped a couple of guineas intohis hand, defiring to be inferted in his lift, upon which occasion I left his service.

> wife of the residence of at 450 Pills to the second of the second of



CHAP. VIII.

Reason of the joy, with which Chrysal was received by his new master. Account of a curious, though not uncommon way of getting a living. Conversation between Chrysal's master, and his guest. They compare notes on their different attempts in the literary trade. Chrysal's master is encouraged by his friend from his own example. A remarkable account of a certain matter, that made much noise.

THE joy my new master selt on the receipt of so small a sum, shewed the consequence it was of to him. He thanked his benefactor, in terms of rapture, and vowing eternal gratitude, and attachment to him, and his cause, departed with an happy heart. Nor was his joy without cause. He had invited an acquaintance to sup and spend the evening with him, and had neither money nor credit to provide any thing for his entertainment.

Despicable as the vainty of making invitations in such circumstances may appear to you, it was one of his chief resources, to support himself, and his family; as he never invited any, but such as he expected to bor-

TOW

TO

ar

te

th

ac

h

0

aj

P

th

tl

tl

j

W

entertain them.

ng .'s

by e-

Your indignation at the mention of so mean a shift shews your happy ignorance of the ways of this populous place, in which there are numbers, who keep up a decency of external appearance, and support life only by this method of raising contributions on their acquaintances, spending with one, what they have got from another, in order to get from him too, and fo on; with this difference only from common beggars, that they feldom apply to the same person twice, and instead of praying for their benefactors with an appearance of gratitude, wherever they meet them, avoid their company, and are always feeking for new acquaintances, as quarry for them to prey upon.

On this errand he had fallied out this morning, but met with fuch bad fuccess, that he had been obliged to have recourse to the subscription-scheme, an addition which he had lately made to his former plan. His joy therefore at my late master's generosity was but natural. He returned home in high spirits, and giving his wife half his prize to provide two or three nice little things, secured

me, for future contingencies.

Every thing being thus adjusted, his guest who came punctually at the appointed time, was received with all the formalities, and airs of politeness, and bigh life. The conversation

tion before, and at supper ran on the usual topicks of the weather, politicks, and the seret bistory of the day; but when my master's lady had withdrawn, and he saw his friend begin to palate his wine with pleasure, (for he never made his push, till the heart was warm) he took occasion from some modest mention the other made of his munisicence in the relief of merit in distress, to lament his own inability to indulge that darling pleasure of his soul, as a proper introduction to his business.

"I have wondered with much concern (answered his friend) at your languishing so

long in this obscurity. It is all your own fault. Why do you not exert yourself?

There is nothing which spirit and diligence

" cannot conquer."

wy master with a shrug of his shoulders, and an heavy sigh) "But what can diligence, or abilities either do, when they cannot find

" employment. I have offered myfelf to

" ministry, and opposition, to booksellers, and

" news-writers; and all to no purpole:

" though indeed if it was not for the affi-

then takes an effay, or a letter from me, I

" should be utterly at a loss. So that what

s can I do?

What! why any thing rather than be-

idle. If one thing won't do, another may.

" There:

66

Adventures of a GUINEA. There is not an article in the trade, which I have not tried in my time, I made bibles, magazines, and reviews; sermons, " ballads, and dying speeches; and though. all failed I never loft my spirit. The mis-" carriage of one scheme only set my invention at work to firike out another. No " man can have greater difficulties to flruggle with, than I had; and yet you fee I have "Yes! but my dearest friend, you had advantages! the countenance, and affifse tance of fuch a patron as your's." "Were just as great advantages to me, "as your patron's are to you; and no more. " I had the honourable advantage of leading a bear, for a bit of bread; and betraying " his fecrets to his father, and mother, for the hope of a church-living, which I should not have got at last; but that it was not " worth felling." "You aftonish me! Don't you owe all wyour preferments, all your affluence to the "interest of your patron? What I owe my preferments to is not ec necessary to mention; but my affluence I. " owe to a very different cause. The detection of that impostor was the thing, that " made my fortune. I might have remained in my original poverty to this day, if it had not been for that."-

nal

af-

his

re,

art

10fi-

to.

0-

n

lo.

n.

ee.

d

d

d

0

d

1

206 CHRYSAL: Or, the

66

66

42

23

66

66

46.

25

46

66

66 -

46

66

66

46

..

ic

..

" For that! Is it possible? I cannot conceive that the profits upon the fale of a " pamphlet or two, (and that not a very er extensive fale neither) could do such great My novel, I thought, bade as fair for a good run, as any thing: it was feafoned bigh to the tafte of the times, and yet " it did very little more than pay." " The fale! Hah! hah! hah! No. no! " I did not depend upon that. My profit " came in another way entirely."-"What can be your meaning? If it be " not too great a fecret, I should be much " obliged to you to explain this matter. It " may possibly be of service to me."-" Why, on that account; and as I think I can depend upon your honour, I don't " much care if I do. If you are so much " furprized at my faying that I made my " fortune by that pamphlet, what will you think when I tell you farther, that I never wrote one line of it, nor was I any more concerned in the fale, than you, who knew " nothing of the matter? But not to perof plex you with gueffing, at what it is im-" possible you should ever discover! You can be no stranger to the noise that impostor made, when he first came here. While " he did no more than tell his own flory, it " was thought by his old fraternity to be " the best way not to give it consequence by contradicting it, but let it die away of " itfelf ;

itself; beside, that possibly it might not " have been so easy to contradict it to any " effect, while the persons concerned were " all living, and the facts fresh in every one's memory. But when he went fo far " as to attack the whole body, and was evidently undermining the foundation upon which they flood, by tearing off the veil of antiquity behind which they hid themefelves and exposing all their mystery to " light, the matter became more ferious, and " it was judged necessary to ruin his character in order to invalidate the credit of his work, the merit of which made a direct " attack not only difficult; but also too " doubtful of success to hazard an affair of

" fuch importance upon it.

y

It

r

-

t

"For this reason heaven and hell were conjured up, and every engine set at work to prove his story of himself salse in every particular, and make him appear the most complicated villain, that ever existed. But the credit of those, who made this attack upon him, was too low, for it to have any effect, as their principles, and the interested motives upon which they proceeded were sufficiently known, so that it only did him service, by shewing his consequence.

"While they were considering how to repair this deseat, necessity suggested to me
the lucky thought of offering them my
assistance,

208 CHRYSAL: Or, the

"affiftance. I had already got some degree of credit by anticipating time in the detection of two silly impostures, the absurance dity of which would soon have discovered them without my help. This gave weight to my offer: accordingly they readily embraced it; and desiring only the sanction of my name, (for which you may judge; I was well paid) took all the trouble upon themselves.

"The reasons, which deseated them, as fifted me: Every thing I was thought to say carried weight, as appearing to proceed from the highest candour, and attachment to truth, as nothing also could man

"from the highest candour, and attach"ment to truth, as nothing also could na"turally be supposed to have made me take such pains to detect an imposture, so sa"vourable to the principles I professed myself. The publick also had got enough of his story, and was ready to listen to one against him. The consequence you know. His character was ruined with the publick; and of course a prejudice raised against his work, which ruined that also, without the trouble of a regular confutation, which as I observed before, might not have been an easy matter: and now I hope the mystery is explained to

" you."-

341 311 1

66

..

66

66

XXXXXXXXXXXXXXXXXXXXXXX

CHAP. IX.

d'

n

1.

CHRYSAL's master makes some striking remarks, on his friend's account of this mysterious transaction, and draws inferences from it, not commonly attended to. He entertains his friend with a curious song, who makes an important hit, just in his own character, upon it. Chrysal's master boggles a little at first, at his friend's proposal, but is encouraged by his example to undertake it.

I AM much obliged to you, for such a proof of your considence, (returned my master) particularly as it clears up some points to me, which I own gave me equal concern, and surprize; and of which delicacy prevented my desiring an explanation from you. These were the manner in which that attack was made upon him, and the arguments and proofs brought in support of it, which were so unfair, inconclusive, and in many instances contracted distory, that I was associated any man of sense and honesty could make use of, or be instuenced by them."

"Why, that is very true. Their zeal often over-shot the mark to be sure. But that signified nothing. Set the publick

onge

210 CHRYSAL: Or, the

66 1

66

66

66

nei

lat

66

66

23

66

66

OL

once upon the fcent of fcandal; and they'll " hunt it like blood-hounds, through thick " and thin. Nothing can be fo gross, as " to stop them. You may as well whistle " to the wind to change its course, as speak " reason to the people, when they have con-" ceived a prejudice.-"But what is your opinion of that affair? " Is he, or is he not, the impostor they " would make him? For I confess, the ar-" guments by which they would prove him one, are so far from answering their deof fign with me, that I think they prove the contrary, by proving nothing; as it is na-" tural to conclude, that if there were any " better, fuch would not have been made " use of. But you certainly must have had " fufficient opportunities of being informed, " in the intercourse you necessarily had with " them."-"As to that, I know no more of the " matter than you do, nor ever gave myfelf " the trouble to enquire. All the inter-" course I had with them, was only to fave appearances, and get my money. Whether he was an impostor, or not was the so fame thing to me. I was paid for feem-

15 ing to prove him one; and that was all

"Do they also pay you for that now?"-

"No. I do that for my own credit. "Were I to retract, all the scandal, that has been heaped upon him, in my name, would revert upon myself, so that when ever I mention him, I am obliged to do it, in the old phrase. I know some squeamish people would have scrupled the whole; but that is not my way of thinking. I hold nothing to be so great a reproach, as poverty; nor any thing a sin, that can get over it. And so here's my service to you. I wish you could hit upon such another opportunity."—

"And if I would scruple to make use of it, may I perish in my present poverty; and I defy the devil to find an heavier

" curfe."

ck

as

ak

n-

. ?

y

rm

2-

be.

1-

y

e

d

C

The conversation then turned to more general topicks, in the course of which, my late mafter naturally coming to be mentioned, " That's right (faid my master) I have " fomething to flew you, that will give you " pleasure. You may remember I told you, " that I am fometimes obliged to a printer of my acquaintance for helping me to a job, " in the letter or esfay-way. Happening to " call upon him this morning, to try if he " could take any thing from me, he shewed " me this" (pulling a piece of greafy paper, out of his pocket) "which I think really " a curiofity. It is a proof of a bawdy-" fong, which the gentleman we have been " talking

212 CHRYSAL: Or, the

" talking of wrote, and had a few copies of printed for the amusement of his parti-

" cular intimates. My friend got it from

" one of his journey-men, who sometimes

" works for that gentleman, and fays there

" are a good many more of them, which are all printed together in a ballad. You'll

" find it worth your reading. Nothing ever

" was fo highly worked up. It gave me in-

effable pleasure."-

"If you can prove this to be wrote by that person" (said the other spitting, and wriggling in his chair, after having pored over it for sometime) "your fortune is "made! you know his enemies are striving to run him down, by any means. Now this will give them so plausible an handle against

will give them so plausible an handle against

" him, that they will not fail to reward you

" liberally for the discovery. All you have to do, is to prove it plainly upon him."—

"I am pretty fure that may be done;"
(answered my master with some hesitation)

" But I-I-I- I hardly know how- I

" am under personal obligation."-

"Nay, if you let such things as that interfere, I give you up. What signifies past obligation, when put in competition

with present interest? You know what my

old antagonist says, that it is a rule among his former fraternity never to let any so-

" cial, or moral duties interfere with reli-

gion, of which he gives a remarkable in-

" Stance

ac ft

u is

cc te

" fi

46. W

es th

ce te

cc fi

cc fi

66 W

cc fe

cc y

cc y

ee [

pur

fub

me

was

and

he

gu

the

by

ing

...

tance in his own story. Now my interest " is my religion; and every thing which in-" terferes with that I abjure; as I have fuf-" ficiently proved. But I beg pardon, I " would by no means press you to do any " thing against your conscience, if it is so " tender."-

of

ti-

m

nes

re

ch

211

rer

n-

VC

nd

bs

to

is

ft

u

70

93

1)

n

"Wrong me not, my dearest friend, by " fuch an opinion: my conscience is as far " from being tender, as your's can be. I " was only surprized, that I had not myself " feen what you mentioned. But now that " your friendship has pointed it out to me, " you shall see me persue it as eagerly as " you can defire. All I want is your direc-

" tion! Leave the rest to me."

The remainder of the evening was spent in consultation upon the plan proper to be purfued, the forming of which my mafter fubmitted implicitely to the fuperiour judgement, and experience of his friend, who was so pleased with this mark of his respect, and fo fure of fuccess, that on going away, he took a modest hint, and lent him five guineas, reminding him at the same time of the confidence he had placed in his honour, by disclosing his affairs to him, and enjoining him to fecrefy.

CHAP. X.

CHRYSAL's master pursues his scheme, and violates moral bonesty to serve the cause of virtue and religion. He waits upon his patron, who bonestly refuses a character, to which he knows he has no right; but undertakes the affair from a more prevailing motive, in which he is remarkably assisted by another person, of less modesty, who pleads the cause of religion and virtue in vain, till honour at length turns the scale in their savour. Chrysal's master is disappointed of his hopes, and makes use of an expedient in character, to escape from the just reward of all his labours. Chrysal changes his fervice.

matter of such importance, my master went next morning to his worthy friend the printer, to whom he opened his scheme, and by his influence with the assistance of a bribe, and promises of much more, he prevailed on the fellow from whom the former paper was got, to betray the trust of his employer, and steal the whole ballad.

The next thing was to make his honest acquisition known to those from whom he expected pec this hav on

afte

ec ;

(E

"

"

66,

66

66

44

66

60

nd

bis

to

r-0-

by

ds

ill

a-

nt

rd

is

d

a

" in power."
" Why, there may be something in that,
" as you say; but for the rest, I care as
" little for the name, as I do for the prac-

"tice; and would not give myself a mo"ment's trouble to get it; so be quick, and
"and let me hear what you have got to
"say. I have a match to ride to morrow
"against a gentleman for a considerable wager, and must see his groom this morn"ing, in order to settle matters with him;
beside which, I have an assignation with
his wife, who expects me at this very time,

" fo that I have not a moment to lose

" about religion, and virtue."

My master, who knew him too well to attempt interfering with such engagements, politely wished him success, and then gave him in few words, an account of the whole affair, only reserving to himself the honour of the thought, with which his patron was so pleased, that he promised to give him all the affistance in his power, if it was only for the fun of the thing.

Accordingly, as soon as he could spare time, from his own weightier concerns, he mentioned the matter, to those more immediately concerned in it, who embraced the project eagerly, and rewarded my master with most liberal promises, for his pains, of which they resolved to take advantage, in order to crush a person, either hated or fear-

ed by every one among them.

In the attack made upon him, for this purpose, the principal part was undertaken by one, whose regard for religion and virtue was heightened

hei tent had big the acti gru gra fuff vail Suc com by c at t no n be k the i be b veig enth difp fult,

lour who life.

ineff were mot

fo A:

7

d

0

W

1-

1-

;

h

0

8,

re

le

10

11

m

e

-

e

T

of

n

S

y

18

d

heightened by a motive not the most consistent with either. This was the person, who had been competitor with the culprit for the bigber order of the MOCK-MONASTERY. In the account I gave you of that curious transaction, I observed that he cherished a secret grudge against the other, which was aggravated fo violently by the difgrace he fuffered on that occasion, that he had prevailed to have him expelled the fociety *. Such an opportunity therefore as this, of compleating his revenge, was not to be miffed by one of his principles. Accordingly, though at the fight of the ballad he knew it to be no more, than a collection of the fongs, which be bad bimself often bore a part in singing, at the monastery, and some of the worst of which be bad boasted of being the authour of, he inveighed against it with all the fervency, and enthusiastick zeal of a modern fanatick, and displayed the danger of letting such an infult, upon every thing held facred, go unpunished, in such strong, and affecting colours, as afforded high entertainment to all who heard him, and were acquainted with his life.

But all his eloquence would have proved ineffectual to make such of his fraternity as were not, like him, stimulated by private motives, give the lie to their own practice in so flagrant a manner, as to censure the theory

^{*} Vol. 3 .- Page 248.

of it, had not some particular expressions happened to affect the honour of one of them, whom all the rest of course espoused; and thus for once, honour turned the scale, in favour of virtue and religion, too light by themselves; and the ballad was condemned, as tending to debauch the principles of the people, though it was sufficiently known that it was not designed for publication, nor would ever have been heard of, had not this attack raised a curiosity about it.

Through the whole of this important transaction, my master performed his part most eleverly, stopping at nothing that was thought any way necessary to bring it to effect. As soon therefore as it was concluded, he prepared to receive the reward of his labour, the enjoyment of which he had anticipated in imagination in every shape it could be

given.

But it was not long before he found his hopes had been too fanguine. Instead of being rewarded immediately, as he had been made to expect, the job was scarce done, when he could perceive the smiles of favour grow cooler upon him, as often as he went to pay his court to his patrons, in order to keep them in mind of their promises. A state of such uncertainty, severe enough upon any, was not to be borne by one in his circumstances. The expectations he had raised in the height of his hopes, had opened the mouths of all his creditors

to for de

refi thr hac his ber his

rece and to

wel

mu

read

of into a appoint the fore

unce he h creditors upon him, with an importunity nor to be quieted; beside, that he had imbezzled fome publick money, intrusted to him, a demand for which he expected every day, and knew he could not shift off, for a moment.

of

72

d,

10 at

ld

t-

f-

fle

ht

As

·e-

ır, ed

be

his

be-

een

nen

OW

Day

em

un-

not

The

of

his

tors

Driven almost to distraction by such irrefiftible necessity, he had no resource but to throw himself at the feet of the person, who had appear'd most fanguine in the pursuit of his scheme, and consequently been most liberal of his promises to him, and implore his affistance to extricate him from his accumulated distresses. But they who will most readily avail themselves of villainy, always detest the villain. All the return he received was a cold profession of concern and a shameless excuse of wanting that power to relieve him, which the caitiffe suppliant well knew he had.

A new misfortune often lightens the weight of those under which the mind was finking before, by rouzing it from liftless dejection, to an exertion of its powers. Such a difappointment of his only hope shewed him all the horrours of his fituation; and made him instantly cast about how to escape from what he found he could not redress: instead therefore of betraying it, by his looks, which he knew were watch'd, he affumed an air of uncommon spirits, and telling every one that he had got a positive assurance of receiving

the

the promised reward without any farther delay, he went to one of his tradesmen, by that time he thought the news might have reached him, and taking up goods to a considerable amount, for which he considently engaged to pay at a fixed and short day, no sooner got them into his possession, than he sold them privately at half price, and packing up whatever he could carry with him, sled beyond the reach of his creditors; and so proved how far his late conduct had proceeded, as he professed, from his high regard to moral virtue, and religion.

The agitation and horrours of his mind, from the time he had resolved upon slight, till he had effected it, may be easily conceived. Whether the present safety, it procured him, gave him any lasting relief, I had not an opportunity of seeing, as I quitted his service, at the inn, where he took a post-chaise to get off; though it is most probable, that after the first hurry of his spirits subsided, a sense of the various villainies, by which he had brought himself to such a state of exile, imbittered the very blessing of liberty, and kept his mind in slavery, though his body was free.

ore of birtaging it. by his book, which he

now were watch'd he afformed an air of

CHAP.

got

my

the

fed

fufl

del

exp

per

as I

(X*X*X*X*X*X*X*X*X*X*X)

dehat

cher-

ig-

em at-

nd

ed

as

ral

d,

ht,

ed

er-

ife

at

he

le,

nd

dy

P.

160111

CHAP. XI.

CHRYSAL again changes his service. His new master is obliged to pay expedition sees, to get over artificial delays. He and his mistress set out on a long journey, to do what might have been better done at home. Chrysal makes some interesting reflections, on a most important subject. Story of Chrysal's master. Chrysal continues his reslections on the same subject, which he considers in a farther, and most affecting point of view. Chrysal changes his service.

When a young gentleman came into the inn, and ordering a chaife and four to be got ready with the utmost expedition, gave my new master a bank-note to pay for it, in the change of which be received me.

The anxiety which my new mafter expressed to have the grooms make haste was a sufficient reason for them to practise every delay they could devise, in order to extort expedition-fees, at which they were so expert, that he was forced to give them almost as much as he paid for the chaise, before he could get it to stir.

L 3

When

When at length every thing was settled, he directed them to a particular place, where an hackney-coach waited for him, out of which he received a young lady, with a couple of small bundles, and then bade the postillions drive on; but they had no sooner got out of the town, than he changed his orders, and directed them to take another road. This occasioned a new delay. The fellows alledged their being obliged to go, where their master had ordered them, and no-where else; and made so many difficulties, that, as they expected, my master was compelled to purchase their compliance, at their own price.

All obstacles being thus got over, he turned to the young lady, who sate trembling, and panting by his side, and embracing her tenderly, "Now, my dearest love, (said he) all our fears are over. Should we be even

" all our fears are over. Should we be even traced to the inn, this turn will effectual-

" ly baffle all pursuit."

"I wish it may," (answered she) "but I so shall never think myself safe, till I am absolutely out of their reach, and all is

" over."

The conversation of lovers is agreeable only to themselves! The rest of their's for two days, as they slew rather than travelled (for which expedition they paid sufficiently, every set of possiblions giving the word to the next) will not bear repetition. As soon as they got to the end of their journey,

alfo per fuc

police for introb

thi tic it,

m

pi tic le

tic

ab

ni di ec

a

they put an end to their most immediate fears also, by a marriage, which might have been performed with a much greater probability of success at home, had not a positive law prevented it.

I fee your surprize at my saying that a positive law prevented marriage, as the prosperity of the community depends in the first degree on the promotion of that state. But so it happens in human affairs, that the true interest of the people is not always the first object of the laws made for their government.

Though too general experience confirms this remark, it is necessary to explain the particular circumstance, that gives occasion to

it, in this instance.

d

re

of

a

er

-

ı.

'3

e

S

The first end of marriage is the propagation of the species, in the manner most agreeable to reason, and likely to produce the happiness of the parties, as well as the population of the state. As the passions, which lead to this end, are strongest before reason has acquired strength to direct them, it is necessary that they should be subject to the direction of others who may be better qualified to discern and promote their interest. This right of direction naturally belongs to those, who are most intimately concerned in that interest, as affecting a part of themselves; and hence, among every people upon the earth, however differing in other respects

0

and customs, this right of directing the matrimonial choice has always belonged to the parents; till maturity of age may be prefumed to ripen judgement, and so remove the necessity upon which it is founded.

But however evident this right is, the paffions of youth so often rebel against it, that it was sound necessary to enforce it by express laws. These laws though, the professed end of which is to make marriage happy, should never be perverted to the unnatural purpose of preventing it entirely, by clogging it with such unnecessary, and unreasonable restrictions, as tend to subjugate not only natural liberty, but also the highest interest of the state, which depends upon population, to avarice, caprice, or pride of family in parents; or to views of interest in those appointed to supply their place.

The particular case of my master, which gave occasion to these resections, was this. He was the younger son of a noble family, to the honours of which his rising virtues promised to add new lustre. Youthful inclination had first attached him to this lady, whose merits upon acquaintance confirmed that attachment, more than her very large fortune. Such a marriage could not fail to meet the approbation of reason, and paternal prudence. Accordingly every necessary preliminary was agreed upon, when the sudden death of her father, threw in legal ob-

stacles,

ftac

Iea

tier

tua

pro

the

her

bre

ad

do

(w

ha

fly

ret

of

pi

fic

in

de

ha

an

la

th

W

stacles, which threatened to prevent it, at least for a longer time than youthful impatience could bear. For, as he had not actually signed to his consent, those to whom the care of his daughter devolved, thought proper to exert the right which the law gave them of objecting to the disparity between her fortune, and that of her lover, and so break off a match evidently for their mutuals

advantage.

na-

he

re-

ve

af-

at

X-

·ſ.

y,

al

3-

y

of

1,

-

When the lovers found that all they could do to influence their compliance was ineffectual, they had recourse to this expedient, (which the fage makers of the law had, perhaps inadvertently, left open) to evade it, by flying beyond its power; and there folemnized a marriage, which should be valid at their return home, though entered into without any of the prudential cautions for fecuring happinels, which are cultomary on fuch occafions, and he had in vain offered to come into; so that the law which was professedly defigned to prevent inconsiderate, and unhappy marriages, in its effect deprived this, and the many marriages of the kind, of the means for procuring happiness, which former laws, founded on reason, had provided for them.

It is not to be denied, but the evils, which were immediately alledged as the occasion of this law, called aloud for remedy; but whether the remedy provided by it did not intro-

L 5

duce

duce an inconvenience of worse consequence to the publick than those evils, is not so clear a case. Whatever restrictions might have been thought necessary, in worldly wisdom, to prevent secret marriages, by which either the honours of families might be supposed to suffer diminution, or their fortunes fall a prey to mercenary design, where these considerations interfere not, such restrictions should

never, in good policy, extend.

On the contrary; every impediment and delay, not immediately proceeding from moral necessity, should be removed; and the state of matrimony encouraged by fuch honours and advantages as should counterbalance the inconveniences of it, to perfons labouring under circumstances of indigence; by which means, the inferiour ranks of the people, whose numbers make the strength of a state, would be delivered from the difficulties and fears which at present deter them from entering into matrimony, to the heavy loss of the community, and the immediate ruin of fuch numbers of both fexes, whose natoral passions, debarred from this, their only proper resource, lead them into such vices, as defeat the end of their creation, and make them a reproach to humanity. How many infants would daily be faved from the most unnatural murder, to the ornament and advantage of their country, could the wretched parents have faved their own shame by marriage?

then tutic eafer of dutinot imp

ed to return mu man on tand mo bis

inn

me

deft

nce

lear

ave

m, her

fed

la

nsi-

uld

ind

ral of

nd

n-

n-

ch

le,

te,

es

m ofs in ay

s,

e

y

marriage? How many females, who offer themselves in the highways to brutal prostitution, perishing with cold, hunger, and difeafe, might have been the happy mothers of many children, and performed all the duties of their station in virtuous esteem, had not their being hindered from marrying, by impediments, made by law, betrayed them to destruction?

As foon as my mafter had thus accomplished the end of his journey, he fet out on his return, to enjoy the fruits of it at home. But I continued not in his possession to see much of that mutual happiness, which hismarriage promised, being borrowed from him on the road, by a gentleman of his acquaintance, who had been bubbled out of all his money at an horse-race, and was now fighting bis way to town, by running in debt at every inn, and raifing contributions thus on all he met, of whom he had the least knowledge.

- an an sham bli never recent deleas if the

និហិមនាក់ មើនមី២ ត្រាមប្រកួតនេះ កំណាំ ១១១៤ ខេត្ត ប្រាយមម្រឹក

street was allevery show a ser-prome taket

of and more revenue application of aims. And are

white the willing black of their hetitals

in while the board and the

L 6 CHAP. e Proposition of the second beautiful that the

CHAP. XII.

CHRYSAL's new master strikes out an adventure. He is smitten with a girl in a travelling waggon, and changes his appearance to get admission to her. Account of the company in the waggon. A good-natured mistake of one of the passengers gives occasion to a broil, which is put an end to by an accident; that does not mend the matter.

DISTRESSING as such a situation would have been to another, custom had made it so familiar to my new master, that he thought nothing of it, but travelled on with his equipage, as unconcerned, and ready to engage in any mad freak, as if his pockets were full of money. Nor was he long without an opportunity of indulging his disposition.

As he was rolling carelessly along, his chariot was stopped in a narrow part of the road, by one of those travelling-waggons, whose unwieldly weight gives them the priviledge of taking place of their betters. Such a circumstance naturally made the travellers in both carriages look out, when he was struck with the uncommon beauty of a young creature in the waggon, whose charms

מנ

in the first opening of their bloom gave scope to imagination to paint a prospect if possible

beyond their present perfection.

ad-

the

ired

Gon

ac-

ion

ano

er,

nd his

he his

his

he

ri-

rs.

ahe

ans

in

Such temptation could scarce be resisted by one who had reasoned his passions into the best subjection, much less by him, who blindly obeyed them in, or rather stimulated them to their utmost excess. He no sooner saw, therefore, than he resolved to bave her by any means. The first thing to be done, for this pious purpose, was to change his appearance, in order to get into her company, as the least suspicion of his rank would directly blow his design. But this was no difficulty. He was well accustomed to lay it down; and the meanest character in life sat as naturally upon him, as his own.

Accordingly as soon as his chariot passed the waggon, he drove on suriously, till he was out of sight, when he alighted, and changing cloaths with one of his servants out of livery, ordered them to leave the great road, and wait for him at an inn, some miles dis-

tance across the country.

Thus equipped for his enterprize, he walked on leisurely, like a common traveller, till he was over-taken by the waggon, the driver of which plied him in the usual way to take a place, which after some affected difficulties he agreed to. But the greatest difficulty arose not from him. The waggon was already so full, that when the driver mentioned taking

in another, the paffengers all cried out against it with one voice. But his authority was too absolute to be resisted. He fix'd his ladder, and ordered them to make room, barely condescending to say that it was for a gentleman, who had been taken fuddenly ill, and wanted to go only to the next village. This circumstance, though treated with brutal difregard by the rest, had an immediate effect upon the tender disposition of his destined prey, who fqueezing clofer to her mother, he crept into his neft, and fettled himfelf as conveniently as he could next to her in the ftraw.

The company, into which he had thus thrust himself, seemed to be a representative of all the heteroclite characters of the age. Beside the young female, whose appearance had attracted him, and her mother, a plain . good-looking woman, it confifted of a mountebank-doctor, and his zany, a methodiftpreacher, a strolling-actor and actress, a fat ale-wife, a fervant-maid, who was going to London to repair a cracked reputation, a recruiting-ferjeant, and two recruits, an outlaw'd fmuggler, and a broken exciseman.

Though my mafter could not at first view diftinguish all their different characters, some of them were fo strongly marked, that he promifed himfelf the highest entertainment from the clashing which he concluded must inevitably arise in such a groupe, and was refolved to promote, upon the first occasion.

But an accident foon gave him that pleasure,

without the trouble of planning for it.

As the weather was warm, and few of the company could be suspected of the delicacy of changing their cloaths often, it may be supposed, that every savour which arose among them was not purely aromatick. My master had not been many minutes in his place, when the various odours furning round him, had such an effect upon his senses, that he undefigningly breathed a wish for a bottle of spirits.

As he had been introduced under the pretence of being fick, the ale-wife, who happened to be near him, mistook his meaning, and thought he wanted a dram, not once dreaming of any other use of spirits. Pulling out a stask therefore from under her coat, in the height of good-nature, "Spirits! (said "she) they are poisonous stuff. Here is "what will do you more good by half!"—Then drawing the cork, and taking a sup, to shew him that was not poison, "Drink some of this," (continued she, reaching him the stask) "and I'll warrant it will settle you." It is right Hollands."—

Before my master had time either to accept or resuse her offer, the actor, who sat between them, smoaked her mistake, and intercepting the bottle, as she reached across

him, cried out in triumph,

" Brave my queen! your gin from Holland pures

My stomach sooner than his head will cure."-

Then taking a large go down, or two, "Here "Belvidera," (added he, giving the bottle to the actress) " in this friendly cup, drown all your forrows!—Drink, as you love me, deep."—

His faithful mate could not disobey such a command. She took the bottle, and lifting it to her head, "Thus to the bottom (said she)

" though it were a mile!"

But she was interrupted in her intention by the smuggler, who lay at her feet, and no sooner smelled the dear liquour, than he raised his head, and perceiving what she was about, "Avast haling there," (cried he, snatching the bottle from her mouth) " or you'll " pump the scupper dry."—And then going to put it to his own, "Hold" (said the exciseman, catching his hand with the same design) "I seize this in the king's name, " till I know whether it has paid duty."

The mention of the word duty fet the fmuggler's blood on fire. "Duty! you "fhark!" (faid he, grafping the bottle fafter, and catching him in return by the throat with the other hand) "I'll feize you! damn "my eyes, and limbs! I'll pay you the duty, if you don't loofe your hold this "moment, you fcoundrel! that I will."

Though he griped the exciseman's throat so hard, that he could not return his compliment in words, he scorned to yield the prize without one effort. Giving a twist therefore with

go he bo

jea hi

in

pe up fu

a ov of the

liq

wh ha ha to fo

the

with all his force to wrest it out of his antagonift's hand, though he could not fucceed, he prevailed fo far as turn the mouth of the bottle downwards, by which means the contents were poured full in the face of the ferjeant, who lay fnoring, on his back, with his mouth wide open.

Welcome, as fuch a guest would have been in a proper manner, the intrusion thus unexpectedly was not fo agreeable. He started up half suffocated; and belching his dose, full in the face of one of the recruits, " Blood anouns! fire! and fury! (sputtered

" he) What's the meaning of this?"

Just as he said this, one of the wheels of the waggon came into a deep hole, with fuch a plump, that though it did not absolutely overset, it tumbled all the passengers on top of one another; and instantly put a stop to the cries of the ale-wife, for the loss of her

liquour.

The screams, oaths, and execrations of the whole company, on this occasion, would have given my master the highest delight, had he not been rather too nearly concerned to enjoy the fun, the fat ale-wife being thrown fo full upon him, that he was unable to ftir, though almost fmothered, fo that he could not help adding his cries to the concert.

是要要要要要要要要要要要要要要要要要要要

CHAP. XIII.

CHRYSAL's master experiences some comfortable consequences from the obliging disposition of the waggoner. He pursues his design, by paying common civility to his mistress's mother. Conversation, and behaviour of the company. Chrysal's master, in the pursuit of his design, meets an adventure that cools his passion, and reassembles the company, when they are all like to be at a fault, till one of them luckily hits off the scent.

When the driver had got his waggon out of the hole, and seen that all was safe about it, he came to know what was the matter with his passengers; and having unpacked them, my master had the pleasure to hear the young woman propose to her mother to walk a little way, till some, not the most agreeable, consequences of the late disaster should blow off, to which she readily consented, as he prepared to accompany them, both for the same reason, and in order to have an opportunity of making an acquaintance, which he found he could not so well do in the waggon.

But

fur mi thu tin wh diff

to

fed lea inn wh exp

all

wa the ho

per

par and he his his

The face else

But the waggoner was not in the humour to give them that indulgence. When they called to him to let them down, he answered furlily, that they had not above a couple of miles to their inn; and if he were to stop thus every moment, he should not get in, in time, and so without any farther ceremony whipped on his horses. This was a severe disappointment to my master, who soon grew so sick, that he could not hold up his head, all the rest of the way.

But the qualms of his stomach did not affect his conscience, so as to make him in the least alter his design. On his arrival at the inn, he made a pretence of the compassion which the young girl and her mother had expressed for him, to attach himself particularly to them, and ply them with wine, by way of return, which salse modesty made the mother take so freely, as gave him good

hopes of fuccess.

of

by

0-

be

r-

at

7-

4

be

at

at

7+

1-

2

ot

e

y

y

r

1-

11

t

The conversation and behaviour at supper was strictly in the character of the company. The methodist made a long grace, and talk'd of religion, and temperance, while he eat more than any two at the table, and his eyes were gloating at the servant-maid, his fellow-traveller, who seemed to listen to him with great complacency, and attention. The actor mimicked the methodist to his face, and lolled out his tongue, at every one else, as they happened to look another way.

The

The actress spoke in heroicks, and turned up her nose at every thing and every body. The fmuggler and excileman fat growling at each other, as if they meant to make a farther trial of their manhood. The ferjeant talked of his exploits in the wars, and proved his valour by an oath at every word, which his two pupils liftened to with looks of admiration, that shewed they designed to imitate that part of his example at least. The ale-wife lamented the loss of her gin, which, fhe faid, she could not replace with any like it, on the whole road. In short, every body eat and talked; and talked and eat together, except the girl and her mother, who were quite lost in aftonishment, at a scene so new to them, and my master, whose thoughts were too much taken up with his own scheme, to mind any thing elfer of to me 135 its gar

Accordingly he stepped out, when supper was ended, and engaging the chamber-maid in his interest, by a present of half a crown, she shewed him where his mistress was to lie, and promised to settle all things in the manner most convenient to his designs, by putting her and her mother in the bed next to the door, there being two in the room, and placing in the other the servant-maid, who paid for a bed to herself, as her modesty would not permit her to sleep with a stranger.

As foon as the house was quiet, and my master thought the wine which he had forced

upon

up

up

ch

te

pe

fic

fu

th

di

ha

W

he

di

pi

ft

fu

in

ui

th

al

jo

W

re

le

in

fe

ar

in

fo

237

upon the mother, had secured her, he got up, and stealing in his shirt to the door of their chamber, found it open, upon which he entered, and crept to the bed, where he expected to find his mistress, without ever considering what must be the consequence of surprizing her, in such a manner. Opening the curtains therefore softly to feel by the difference of size, on which side she lay, he had scarce put his hand upon the cloaths, when it was seized and griped so hard, that he soon lost all thought of every thing, but disengaging himself.

ga

d

S

8

d

For this purpose, he made two or three efforts, but finding them ineffectual, and provoked at the pain his hand suffered in the struggle, he discharged a blow with the other sull on the face of his antagonist, who springing directly out of bed, returned it with such usury, that my poor master fell sprawling on the sloor, where he roared out murder with all his might, in which he was immediately joined by those who lay in the other bed, whose cries not only raised the house to his rescue, but also saved him from farther violence, his antagonist desisting to beat him, in order to make his retreat in time.

When those, who lay nearest, were assembled at the door, half clad, and worse armed with whatever they could catch up in their confusion, prudential regard to personal safety made them all stop short, every from going in first, and pressing the post of honour upon his neighbour, till they at length raised their sears so high, that it was uncertain whether any one would venture in before day-light, though the cries still continued, had not the smuggler, who did not wake to join them at first, put an end to the debate. "Damn you all," (said he, snatching a candle from one, and a poker from another) for a pack of cowardly lubbers! Will you fand jawing here, while the people are murdering?" Then rushing in, "Hallo!" (continued he) "what's going forward here, in the devil's name?"

The first object that presented itself to his view, when he entered, was my master, who was still upon the ground; unable, between fright and beating, to rise. Advancing to him therefore, "Hip messmate!" (said he, giving him a kick on his naked posteriours) "What chear? Speak, if you are alive!"—

The entrance of light restoring my master to some spirit, he raised his head at this salute, and making an effort to get up, "I "scarce know whether I am, or not," (answered he) "I have been so beaten by that bitch of Babel; but she shall pay for it, if I ever recover."—

The place, where he was found, directing this accusation to the person, in that bed, while some of them helped him up, the rest gathered

the tro

ma

to

25

ec .

ter

••

"

46

**

all

-

gathered round it, and asked the servantmaid, who lay there, what had induced her to treat the gentleman in such a manner. But the mention of her name saved her the trouble of a reply. Before she could speak, "It was not she!" (exclaimed my master) "I mean the old Beldam, mother to the "young Witch, whose baby-sace brought "me among you, and who lay in this bed. "It was she, who abused me thus; or ra-"ther some porter in woman's cloaths, who "passed for her, for no woman ever had

"I believe you must be mistaken, Sir," (in-

terposed the exciseman) " the people you " mean are lying quietly in the next bed,

" and feem to be as much frighted as you

are hurt."-

If

of

th

C-

e-

1-

ce

e-

g

r)

u

re

"

.

is

0

n

0

r

-

I

t

"How!" (returned my master) "did they not lie in this bed, next the door?"—

"No," (answered the other) "Mrs. Mar-"gery lies here, as grave, and demure, as a

" whore at a christening."

"Then the jade of a chamber-maid play-

" ed me a trick;" (replied my master)

" But who the devil lay with her? For I

" am fure, she was never able to do, what I

" have fuffered."-

"As for that!" (said the actor, who had all the while been peeping round the bed) "I believe it will be no hard matter to find it out." "These breeches" (pulling a pair from

one finding some pretence to excuse himself from going in first, and pressing the post of honour upon his neighbour, till they at length raised their sears so high, that it was uncertain whether any one would venture in before day-light, though the cries still continued, had not the smuggler, who did not wake to join them at first, put an end to the debate. "Damn you all," (said he, snatching a candle from one, and a poker from another) for a pack of cowardly lubbers! Will you stand jawing here, while the people are murdering?" Then rushing in, "Hallo!" (continued he) "what's going forward here, in the devil's name?"—

The first object that presented itself to his view, when he entered, was my master, who was still upon the ground; unable, between fright and beating, to rise. Advancing to him therefore, "Hip messmate!" (said he, giving him a kick on his naked posteriours) "What chear? Speak, if you are alive!"—

The entrance of light restoring my master to some spirit, he raised his head at this salute, and making an effort to get up, "I "scarce know whether I am, or not," (answered he) "I have been so beaten by that bitch of Babel; but she shall pay for it, if I ever recover."—

The place, where he was found, directing this accusation to the person, in that bed, while some of them helped him up, the rest gathered the

ma

to

44

"

66

ter

•

"

44

all

**

"I believe you must be mistaken, Sir," (interposed the exciseman) " the people you " mean are lying quietly in the next bed,

" and feem to be as much frighted as you

" are hurt."____

elf

of

th

r-

e-

u-

ce

e-

g

r)

u

re

33

e,

is .

O

n

0

3)

-

it

t,

"How!" (returned my master) "did they not lie in this bed, next the door?"—

"No," (answered the other) "Mrs. Mar-"gery lies here, as grave, and demure, as a

" whore at a christening."

"Then the jade of a chamber-maid play-

" ed me a trick;" (replied my master)
" But who the devil lay with her? For I

" am fure, the was never able to do, what I

" have fuffered."-

"As for that!" (faid the actor, who had all the while been peeping round the bed) "I believe it will be no hard matter to find it out." "These breeches" (pulling a pair from

240 CHRYSAL: Or, the

from under the bolfter) "must belong to fome body, and will certainly point out her bedfellow, if the lady, like a true Amasson, did not wear them herself,"—

zzzzzzzzzzzzzzzzzz

CHAP. XIV.

The advantage of a ready assurance. The methodist accounts curiously for what he has done; and turning the tables upon Chrysal's master charges him with robbery, who is thereupon obliged to discover himself, but is contradicted by one of the company, who hoasts of a curious acquaintance with him in his own character. He is luckily recognized by a footman, whose master extricates him from his distress, and makes out the mistakes, that had caused so much confusion.

As the breeches were immediately known to belong to the methodist, they marched away directly to his bedside, for he had not joined them, and asked him how he had come to use the gentleman in that inhuman manner, shewing him my master, whom they had dragged along with them.

"Who I?" (answered the methodist, affecting all the surprize of innocence, and determined to deny what he thought could not be proved) "Heaven forbid that I should

" use

60 1

ec]

. cc t

in r

fter

« a

ce f

« u

cc t

66

thoo

· I

« n

" I

« C

" 0

" d

ce th

cc a

ce V

" W

ec he

ec m

cc m

« re

V

" use any fellow-christian ill. I engage not in such broits. My warfare is with the

" fpirit."

to

er a-

MI.

10-

as

Y -

bo

ut

bo

in

ed

m

25,

vn

h-

ad

ad

an

y

f-

e-

ot

ld

fe

VOL. IV.

"And fometimes with the flesh too, I believe, doctor!" (interrupted the actor)
"Nay it is in vain to deny it! do you know

" these breeches, doctor?

"Breeches!" (exclaimed he, starting up in real affright, and fumbling under his bol-ster) "O they are gone! they are gone! I "am robbed, ruined, and undone."—

"No, doctor; they are not gone, as you fee! But the question is, how they came under the young woman's bedshead, where

" this gentleman received this abuse."-" Let him answer that!" (replied the methodift, never at a loss for an impudent lie) Let him answer that! all I know of the " matter is this: Being disturbed in my rest, " I then knew not, but now plainly perceive " by what cause, I arose to pray, as is my " custom, when hearing somebody go softly " out of the room, I watched, as was my "duty to prevent any evil, and following " the footsteps into another chamber caught " a man in the very fact of attempting the " virtue of some female, who lay there; upon " which, expostulating with him upon the " heineousness of such a crime, he flew at " me so furiously that I could scarce defend " myself from him, and if in the fray he " received any hurt, he must charge it to

242 CHRYSAL: Or, the

himself, as he was the aggressor. But this is not the whole; I now perceive, that I

" was disturbed out of my sleep, by his

" fteeling my breeches, from under my head,

"which he accordingly took with him into the room of that damfel, and therefore I

demand justice against him, for the at-

" tempt, as well as for any loss I may have

46 fuffered."-

Saying this, he took his breeches out of the actor's hand, and fearching the pockets, "It is too true!" (continued he, gnashing his teeth, and wringing his hands, in a perfect agony) "It is too true! I am ruined "and undone! I am robbed of all the momey which I had collected in my pilgrimage to relieve the poor of the Lord. Twenty golden guineas, beside silver and other monies. Let him be searched! Let every body be searched this moment. I must have my money! I must have my mo-

« nev."___

As my master was a stranger to them all; and not blessed with a face, that could bespeak much favour, they began to give credit to the charge against him, especially as the servant-maid corroborated it, by saying that he had also been rumaging for her pockets, when that worthy gentleman interrupted him (for women and all were now gathered to hear the matter canvassed) and talked of carrying him before a magistrate

jail

in

gin no the len

tre

wa

"

"

no

CO

**

"

66

20

my

Adventures of a GUINEA. 243 in the morning, that he might be fent to jail.

At another time, fuch a scene would have given him the highest pleasure, but he had no taste for fun now. Enraged therefore at the iniquity of fuch a charge, and the infolence with which they were proceeding to treat him, " Unhand me, at your perils you " fcoundrels" (faid he, telling them who he was) "Unhand me, this moment. As for " that infamous villain, and his trull, I charge " you to fecure them directly, and fend in " my name for a magistrate. I'll make ex-" amples of them at leaft."-

You may conceive with what furprize they were all struck at hearing this. However, as he gave only his bare word for it, all were not equally ready to believe him. "You. " my friend Scapegrace! " (faid the actor, coming, and looking him full in the face) " No! no! Sir. Say that to those, who

" don't know him. I am his intimate com-" panion; his chosen among ten thousand.

" There is not a fine girl upon the town but " we have bilked; nor an house in the bun-

" dreds of Drury where we have not kicked

" up a dust, together. He and I are Pylades, " and Orestes; sworn friends and brothers.

" No! no! that stroke won't pass upon

" me."

This made matters worfe than ever with my master, adding ridicule to insult, which M 2

rate in

this

at I

his

ad.

nto

e I

at-

ave

of

ets,

ing

er-

ned

no-

age

nty

her

erv

nust

no-

all;

be-

rive

ally ay-

her

ter-

NO

and

was poured upon him, in fuch torrents from every mouth, that he could not speak a word in his own defence. But his diffress lasted not long. The servants of a gentleman, who luckily happened to lie at the inn that night, being raised by the uproar, one of them knew my master, through all his difguises. " By your leave there !" (said he, rushing through the croud, and shoving aside some of them who had already laid hold of him) " Are you all mad, to use a gentleman " in this manner?"- Then addressing himfelf to my master, "What is the matter. " please your honour? I am forry to see your " honour in fuch a pickle. My mafter (name ing him) is in the house, and will do you " juffice. I'll run, and call him up di-

" rectly."

Such a testimony instantly turned the scale, and made those who were most insolent to him before, now most officious to pay him respect, and attendance. Accordingly he was removed, without asking his leave, into his own room, where they were preparing to humanize his appearance, when the gentle-

man entered.

Much as my master was above the weakness of shame, he could not avoid feeling tomething like it, on being caught in fuch a condition. He was fitting on the fide of the bed, covered only with the ragged remains of his shirt which had been torn to pieces in the

the dirt, fcarc divin orig

T

and be h when cern the put matt

to b

T vant Spiri pron there ed t with desir fente fecu was ' malt ed, i have intru upor fuch

forg

the fray, daubed all over with blood and dirt, and beaten to fuch a degree, that he scarce retained one feature of the buman face divine, which had not lost all likeness of the

original.

om

: a

ress

le-

inn

one

his

he,

ide

of

an

m-

er.

ur

n-

ou

i-

le,

to

m

as

is

to

e-

-

g

e

IS

n

C

The gentleman started at such a spectacle, and stopped short in doubt whether it could be he, till my master's voice satisfied him; when he gave orders to have every one concerned in the affair fecured, and then feeing the poor sufferer taken proper care of, and put to bed, he proceeded to enquire into the matter, the circumstances of which appeared to be thefe.

The methodist having agreed with the fervant-maid, his fellow-traveller, to have fome spiritual conversation with her that night, she promised to lie in the bed next the door, and therefore after the chamber-maid had affigned them their quarters, as she had settled with my mafter, feigned some pretence to defire a change, which the others readily confented to. Accordingly as the methodist was fecure of his reception, he came foon, and was got into bed to his disciple, when my master made his attempt, whose hand he seized, in the manner I have related; and would have beaten him still more severely for his intrusion, had it not been for his crying out, upon which he retreated to his own bed, in fuch an hurry, to escape detection, that he forgot his breeches, which he had taken with M 3 him

him for fear some of his chamber-fellows, should search them, and rob him of eight or ten guineas, that he had picked up in the course of his preaching about the country, and the actor had made bold to take as lawful prize, when they fell into his hands, and afterwards found means to convey to his wife, for more security.

fha

ou

ex

tir

in lai

bo

te

Every thing being thus cleared up, the gentleman advised my master to drop the affair, as prosecuting it would only expose him still more, to which he willingly agreed, having no inclination for any farther trouble

about it.

The methodist though was far from being fo eafily pacified, for the loss of the fruits of his fummer's labour in the vineyard, which he thought worfe of than a thoufand beatings, and was refolved to recover if polfib'e, in spite of all their scoffs, and infults. But the detection, of the other part of his flory, had so entirely destroyed his credit, that he found it in vain to perfift, especially as the actor offered to make oath that he had that very evening applied to him, to borrow a shilling to pay his reckoning. Cursing them all therefore in the bitterness of his foul, he changed his route, and went upon another preaching progress in order to retrieve his loss, in which pious work he prevailed up in his disciple and fellow-sufferer in shame,

shame, the servant-maid, whose pockets had

escaped the pillagers, to accompany him.

By this time, the waggon was ready to fet out, when the rest of the company departed, except the actor, and his lady, who were so tired of that vulgar way of travelling, that they thought proper to continue their journey, in the stage coach; and my master, who was laid up in salves, and slannels, and had lost both ability, and inclination to pursue his enterprize any farther.

XXXXXXXXXXXXXXXXXXXXXX

CHAP. XV.

CHRYSAL gives a striking account of his master. He arrives in London, and pays a visit to his mistress. His curious method of courting. His mistress makes him a present of half her fortune beforehand, in return for which he promises to marry her next day, and then goes to his girl. Difference in his hebaviour to the two naturally accounted for. An uncommon guest at a wedding, with as uncommon a manner of celebrating a nuptialnight, shew a still more uncommon instance of matrimonial complaisance. Chrysal changes his service.

THE fingularity of my master's character gave me a curiosity to take a view of his life, while he was sleeping off some of M 4 the

llows eight n the ntry,

lawand his

the the pofe eed, uble

uits ard, and pofilts. his dit, ally

ow ing his

re-

in e,

the effects of his late adventure. He was born in a rank, that supported the fair hopes of honour, and advantage, which the first opening of his youth, univerfally raised. But an errour in his education blafted all those hopes in the bud, and drove him into every extream of vice, and folly, which it was de-

figned to guard againft.

The bad consequences which are seen to attend indulging the passions too far, often lead weak minds to attempt suppressing them entirely, without confidering that the crime is only in the excess. The difficulty, and pain of this attempt throws fuch a gloom over the whole appearance, as hides the native beauty of virtue, and makes it feem to be the fource of unhappiness, to those who view it only in these effects, so as to terrify them from the pursuit of it.

On this errour pretended enthusiasts have in every age founded their influence, by enstaving the mind to groundless terrours, which they never fail to turn to their own advantage. To the conduct of fuch blind, and base guides, the mother of my master, to whom the sole care of his education had fallen by the death of her husband, implicitely refigned herself, and of course her son, in return for which they flattered her fanaticism, and vanity together, with promifes of breeding him up in

the perfection of fanctity.

ev

ftu

We

to.

lo

an

an

m

li

er

C

ta

tı

h

For this purpose, he was debarred from every innocent recreation, and harraffed with studies, improper for his age. His appetites were mortified by fasting; his rest was broken to chaunt hymns, and pray; nor was he allowed even to speak but in scripture-phrase ; and all as the indispensible duties of virtue

and religion.

es

A

e

Such a flavery naturally gave him to great an aversion to every thing that bore their names, that the moment he became his own master, he placed the supreme pleasure of his life, in acting in contradiction to them, by every instance of expensive and vicious excefs, in which he fquandered away the inheritance of his ancestors, and broke his constitution with a rapidity, that gave fcandal to vice, put folly out of countenance, and made his name a bye-word in an age of excesses. And in this fituation he was, when I came into his possession.

Though it was near noon before he awoke. the gentleman whose presence had so luckily relieved him the night before, waited to fee him, when he compleated his kindness by lending him money to defray his expences up to town, upon which he fent for his equipage, and fet off without farther concern at

what had happened.

On his arrival in London, he drove directly to the last place, which any other man inhis circumstances would have thought of go-

M 5

ing to. This was the house of a lady of large fortune, to which he had paid his addresses, since his extravagance had dissipated his own; and with this peculiar honesty, that he never even pretended a regard to herself.

The fuccess of fuch a courtship must appear improbable, but there is no accounting for the caprice of woman. She had taken a liking to him, which feemed to rife in proportion to the flights he shewed her, and was refolved to gratify, if only nominally, for she could expect no more, at the hazard of

every happiness of life.

It may be supposed that the fight of him, in fuch a condition struck her severely. She flew to him, threw her arms around his neck, and bemoaned his misfortune in the most passionate terms. But that was not what he wanted. Shaking her off, without feigning the least return to her fondness, "Psha!" (faid he) " leave off this stuff; and let me " know whether you have got the money, I " told you I should want to pay off those debts of honour! If you have, and will also " give me up the rest of your fortune with-

" out referve, I'll marry you."-"Will you?" (exclaimed she, in rapture) " then you have it, if it were ten times as

" much. Here it is" (opening a bureau and reaching him an handful of bank-notes)

" I fold out half my fortune to raise it, the

very day you fpoke to me.".

" I wifh

Adventures of a GUINEA. 251 "I wish I had known that" (faid he; putting the notes in his pocket) " and then I " might have made my excursion into the country longer. Farewell! I'll call upon " you to-morrow-evening, and conclude the " job. Do you have the hangman, and hal-" ter ready."-"What do you mean? I don't understand " you.-"What should I mean, but the parson, " and the ring. Is not that an halter; And " does not he hang us up with it for life?"-"But can't you stay a few moments! I " want to know how you come in that condition!"-"It was only a scrape about a wench. I'll " tell you the particulars another time. My " girl would not forgive me, if she knew I " was fo long in town, without going to-" her."-" But will you certainly come to-morrow? "I am afraid you will disappoint me, now " you have got what you wanted."-" Never fear! I have not got what I " want, while you have a shilling left in the world." Saying which he walked away without deigning to take any farther leave. But his behaviour was not so cavalier, where he was going. The moment he entered his mistress's room, she slew at him, not with the fondness of a dove. "So!" (faid

M 6

the)

of

d-

ed

at

p-

g

)-

19

r

of

she) "what bawdy-house have you been breaking up now? You do well to come to me in such a pickle; but I'll see you damn'd before I take the trouble of nurs-

" ing you."

"Don't be in a passion, my love" (said he, taking her in his arms, and giving her a kis) "It is no such thing. I fell among a "gang of foot-pads, who abused me in this "manner, because I made resistance."—

"A very likely ftory truely, invented, I fuppole, to excuse your not bringing me

money! but if that is the case, you may go to the devil from whence you came

"No, my dear! I never come to you mempty-handed, let me do as I will, else"where." — With which words, he pulled out one of the bank-notes, he had just got from the other, and giving it to her, put

her at length in a good humour.

I see your indignation at a man's acting in such a manner; but you could expect no other. The same baseness of tempor which could treat the other woman, with insult, naturally submitted to be insulted by this.

You imagine that his mistress, must have uncommon attractions! to give her such power over him! You judge right: Her's were uncommon indeed. She had lost her hair and teeth in a salivation; and was allowed to be the most profligate of her profes-

fion;

110

d

r

fion; charms sufficient to attach a man of

My master having thus happily made his peace, the loving couple sat down to their bottle, as usual, over which happening to mention his intended marriage the next day, her delicacy took such offence, that she positively refused to consent to it, till he promised not only that she should be present, but also to return, and spend his wedding-night with her, to prove her triumph over the happy bride.

Accordingly he took her with him the next evening, and introducing her to the expecting fair one, "I have brought my girl (faid he) to grace our nuptials. The dear creature infifted upon it; and you know I can't refuse her any thing."—The bride elect was so enraptured at the thought of her approaching happiness, that she had no sense of the insult, but received her with politeness, perhaps not without a mixture of pride, on the occasion.

There are some scenes, the extravagance of which beggars description. I shall therefore only say, that the behaviour of the company was in character, during the ceremony, and entertainment, at the end of which, the bridegroom alledging his promise to go back with his mistress, the convenient bride not only consented; but also proposed preparing an apartment for her, in her own house, to

254 CHRYSAL: Or, the

fave him that trouble for the future, and procure for herself the pleasure of his company; a scheme, that was actually carried into execution, while she had an house to receive her; which was not very long, a continuance of the same extravagance that had dissipated his own fortune soon dissipating her's also.

It may be imagined that I did not remain long in the possession of such a master. He lost me, the next evening after his marriage, on a bet, that he could repeat the Lord's Prayer, which he laid on purpose to lose, in order to prove how entirely he had got rid of the prejudices of education.

CHAP. XVI.

CHRYSAL makes some reflections, not likely to be much regarded. His master pays a lovevisit to a young lady, whose father interposes unpolitely, and makes some out-of-the-way objections. Chrysal's master hits upon a scheme for getting over them. He proposes marriage on certain terms, which are agreed to, and the day fixed at a little distance.

I HAVE on former occasions given you a fufficient description how people of fashion spend their time in gaming-houses, where though every meeting produces new missor-

tunes to some of the company, there is such a fameness in the manner, as will not bear repetition, and must cloy any creature not absolutely under infatuation, or obliged to make a trade of it for bread, as neither of which was the case of my new master, he left the company early, to purfue pleafures, more in his own tafte.

In no instance are the contradictions in human conduct fo strongly shewn, as in that of man to woman. He who would lose his life rather than violate the ftrictest principles of honour, or honesty (as they are abfurdly diftinguished from each other) in his intercourse with another man, not only scruples not to study deceit, and practice the blackeft, and bafeft villainies against woman; but will even glory in the fuccess of them, when accomplished, without shewing remorfe in himself, or meeting reproof from others.

The reason of this is generally said to be man's partiality to his own cause, which as he has the power of judging in his hands, whether by usurpation or right, it matters not, makes him pardon in others, the crime

he would be glad to commit himself.

But without exculpating him in the leaft, woman bears an heavy share, in the blame of her fex's ruin. I mean not here by her immediate confent in her own case, but by the countenance which she shews to the perpetrators of it, in that of others; it being as cer-

256 CHRYSAL: Or, the

tain in fact, as it is gross and absurd to thought, that the surest recommendation to the general favour of women is the same of

having ruined numbers of them.

Whether this proceeds from a vain ambition of triumphing over the triumpher, or an affectation of disdaining to espouse the cause of the fallen, as having forfeited the common regards of humanity, makes no difference in the consequence, whatever it may in the crime, as it opens an opportunity to the spoiler to extend his conquests often upon themselves, in the midst of their security; whereas, would women shew a true sense of the honour of their fex, by refusing every kind of intercourse with such as had ever violated it, man's partiality to himself would lose its effect, and all his designs upon them be restrained within the proper boundaries of virtue.

..

66

..

fw

at

66

From the place, where I came into the possession of my new master, he went to pay a visit to a young lady of uncommon beauty, and merit, whom he was violently in love with; that is, he was earnestly bent upon gratifying his desire for her, at the expence of her ruin; an enterprize for which he was eminently qualified, being possessed of all the advantages of youth, fortune, and address, and absolutely free from every restraint of principle, as he had proved on several successful occasions of the same kind. The reception

ception he met shewed that he had made an interest in her heart; but all his experience in the science of intrigue could not elude the vigilance of her virtue for a moment, nor find the least opening for any attack upon her honour.

Such difficulties only redoubled his ardour. As he was confidering therefore next morning, how he should proceed, he was interrupted in his meditations, by a visit from his mistress's father. After some time spent in common chat, " I have taken the liberty to " wait upon you, Sir," (faid the father) " about an affair, the importance of which, " to my happiness, will apologize, for any " feeming unpoliteness in it. I have for " fome time taken notice of the frequency " of your visits to my house, the honour of " which I am justly sensible of, but not so " far dazzled by, but I can fee the motive " of them through it; and therefore must' " for many reasons beg leave to desire, that " you will discontinue them."

"I-I-I don't understand you, Sir;" (anfwered my master, a good deal disconcerted at fo unexpected an address) "I have no " motive that I defire to conceal, or is any

" way inconfistent with the character of a gentleman."

" Pardon me, Sir, (replied the other) " I " mean no fuch thing. But yet, what may " be thought confiftent with that character "in fome things, may be very inconfishent with the happiness of a father. To be plain, Sir, I am not so unacquainted with the world, but I can see that all your visits are paid to my daughter; and as she is not upon a level with you either in family, or fortune, for a wife, I must repeat my request, that you will drop a pursuit, which must therefore have another view."

"You do injustice to your daughter," (returned my master, recovered from his surprize, and convinced that it was in vain to dissemble any longer) "to say that she is not upon a level with any man alive. I am above the vain pride of family; and as to fortune, my own satisfies me, without hazarding my happiness, to seek for

more."

"These" (said the lady's father) " are truly the sentiments of a gentleman, nor have I any doubt of the sincerity, with which you declare them. But there are other considerations that make it impossible to carry them into execution. You, and my daughter profess different principles of religion; and as I can by no means expect that you should change your's, so, I hope, she is too sirmly established in her's, to quit them for any worldly homour, or advantage."

This was a stroke my master was not prepared for. He acquiesced therefore seeming-

259

ly, with the best grace he could, to avoid entering more explicitely into the subject, till he should have time to concert measures for getting over this new difficulty, for his honour was now picqued; and he resolved to stop at nothing, if only to punish the insolence of herefather, in presuming to forbid him his house.

Accordingly, after revolving a variety of schemes, he fixed upon one, which he thought could not fail. Big with this hope, he went next morning to wait upon his mistress, notwithstanding the interdiction of her father, and finding her alone, after fome moments of mutual confusion, on the circumstances of fuch a meeting, " I-I-I am come ma-d " dam" (faid my mafter, hesitating, an blushing as he spoke) " I am come in con-" fequence of what paffed between your fa-" ther and me yesterday, of which I pre-" fume he has informed you. It never was " my defign to disavow a passion, upon " which depends the happiness of my life. I " only waited till fome particular circum-" stances should enable me to declare it with " more convenience. But as he has made " the discovery, that referve is no longer ne-" ceffary. If therefore, madam, I can be fo " happy, as to find favour in your fight, all " his objections I prefume will be removed " by my offering to marry you directly; on " this fole condition, that our marriage shall " be

" be kept inviolably fecret, till I have ac-" complished some affairs, to which you must be fensible, the difference of our religions " would be a prejudice. The ceremony " shall be performed by any clergyman you " please, in the presence of your father, and " any other witnesses in whose secrefy we " can confide, and every thing done that can convince you of the fincerity and ho-" nour of my attachment. Speak then, " dearest madam, and make me happy, by " complying with a proposal, that has your " happiness in view, equally with my own." "I should be unworthy of the honour you " do me" (answered she, the blush of true modesty heightening the charms of her beauty) 45 if I could let it interfere with superiour " obligations. When the approbation of " my father gives a proper fanction to your " application to me, you will probably find " no great difficulty, in making my inclina-" tion go hand in hand with my duty."-

Her father just then entering, relieved her from the embarrassement of any farther conversation upon so delicate a subject; and she withdrew. But my master was under no such difficulty. Encouraged by a reply so favourable to his hopes, he directly repeated his proposal to her father, who promised him a decisive answer, next morning.

As the manner of his reception left him no room to doubt of his fuccess, he went

again

again at the time appointed, when the father gave his consent without difficulty, as did his mistress, stipulating only for a short delay, till she should return from the wedding of a young lady, her cousin, who lived at some distance in the country, and had engaged her to attend her upon that occasion. As he could make no just objection to this, however disagreeable suspension of his hopes, he consented with a compliment, that his resolution was too sirmly fixed, for any time to make him change it, and then took his leave, exulting at the success of his project.

CHAP. XVII.

CHRYSAL's master is privately married. Not satisfied with one wife for love, he wants another for money. He proposes the matter to his wife, on whose refusal, he discloses his grand scheme; in which, deep as it is laid, he has the mortification to find himself anticipated, and his own weapons turned upon himself. Consequences of this discovery. Chrysal's master takes a common method of silencing scandal. Chrysal changes his service.

THE smiles of hope make the sunshine of life; as the mind is then too intent upon the object in expectation, to see the the inconveniences, which afterwards imbitter the enjoyment of it. The absence of his mistress, though considerably longer, than he had apprehended, passed away pleasantly in the thought of his approaching happiness. As soon as she returned, therefore, he directly claimed the performance of her promise, to which all parties consenting, they were married by his own chaplain, in the private manner he desired.

Possessed thus of his wishes, his next care was to enjoy them, with the most convenience to himself. For this purpose, he took an house, next to his own; and opening a secret communication between them, he removed her thither, as he could not take her directly home, without declaring his marriage.

Mortifying, as the mysterious appearance of such a situation must have been to her, she made no objection, but complied implicitely, in that and every thing else, as if she had no will, but his. Passions merely sensual are soon sated. Though the resemblance of this intercourse to an intrigue heightened the pleasure of it, he had not carried it on long, when an opportunity of marrying to great advantage, in the phrase of the world, awoke his ambition, and gave his wishes another turn.

After some little conslict with himself, in which however the object in view proved too powerful for that in possession, he resolved to break

break the matter to his wife. Accordingly, as they fat together one morning at breakfalt, after some expressions of uncommon tenderness, " The regard, which my dearest girl " has always shewn for me" (said he, blushing at his own baseness as he spoke) "con-"vinces me that she will not only take plea-" fure to hear of any thing to my advan-" tage, but also forward it as-far, as may " be in her power."

" I hope no action of my life" (answered fhe, furprized at his speaking in such a manner) " fince I have been married to you, has

" given any reason to doubt either my duty, or affection, that you should imagine such

" a preface necessary to introduce whatever

" you think proper to command."

" Very true, my dearest life. But-but-" but there are fome things, the nature of " which requires delicacy, even to you, whose " understanding is superiour to the foibles " of your fex. You know the young lady " Worthland! I have received intimation that my addresses would not be unacceptable Now as her rank and fortune " to her. " would entitle me to expect the first ho-" nours in the flate, I have that confidence " in the atrachment and love of my dearest

" my interest."-" As how?" (replied she eagerly, alarmed at the hint, but unwilling to think fo mean-

" girl, as to think that you will not oppose

n

0

264 CHRYSAL: Or, the ly of him, as to understand it) "As how? What interest can you possibly have in her " rank and fortune?"-"The interest, which the law gives an " husband. Possession! absolute possession of " the whole."-" An husband? Good God! how can that " be? Are you not already married?"— "True, my dearest life! But as that mar-" riage is a fecret, if it can be kept fo, it " will be no obstacle. You shall remain, as " you are, the wife of my love; and I will " be only the husband of her fortune."-"How you men, whose minds are stronger, " take pleasure in playing with the weakness " of woman? The very mention of such a "thing even in jest, (for it is impossible " you can be ferious) strikes me with hor-" rour." "In jest! I am serious upon my honour; and expect your immediate compliance, as a or proof of your duty and affection."-"And can you mention honour, in the " fame breath with fuch a base proposal? What a profanation of the word? But whether you are serious, or not, I must be " fo, on fuch an occasion; and therefore I " declare that I never will facrifice both honour and conscience, by giving what you " are pleased to call a proof of duty, and " affection, but what would really prove that " I had neither."-"This

.

66

"

..

66

..

550

cc I

.. 2

ss f

ec ()

56 T

"I

er d

er te

er fe

es bi

se pu

ce fe

er do

" tu

ce fu

" ab

V

60

"This romantick spirit, child, much as " you think it becomes you, is all thrown " away. I am determined; and you must " fubmit. But let me tell you, that on the " manner of that submission depends your " future welfare. If you comply properly with my proposal, I will make a settle-" ment upon you, that shall exceed any ex-" pectations you could naturally have had in " life, and remain your husband, in every " thing but the empty name. But if you attempt making the least opposition to my will, I cast you off from this moment to beggary and shame; nor shall any late repentance ever bring me to receive you again; fo confider the consequence, be-" fore you rashly run upon your ruin; I " shall expect your final resolution to-morrow." row of mile or awai I makely

C

e

it

e

1

u

nd

at

is

"For that, you need not wait a moment.
"I fear no consequence that can attend my
doing what is right. The duty of obedience, I have fulfilled in its utmost extent, by immuring myself thus, and forfeiting my good name to keep your secret;
but while my conscience witnessed for the
purity of my heart, I regarded not the present censure of the world, no more than I
do now, from the same principle of virtuous resolution, your vain threats, for in
such a light, the laws of my country enable me to hold them."

Vol. IV.

"Then claim their protection if you please; but you will find that they afford none to you. Such marriages as your's, between people professing different religions, are made void by those laws, and therefore if you think proper to depend upon them, I give you this notice, that you have noting to expect from me, but what they

"And was this your motive" (returned the, with a fpirit raifed by indignation) "for defiring a private marriage? Impossible! you could not, cannot be fo bale. You only have a mind to try my resolution, which you shall ever find immoveable in this, and every cause of virtue, and ho-

of nour. he deler line is

"Madam, I have no more time to trifle in this manner; therefore once more I defire you to let me know your final determination; for notwithstandingthis behaviour, I still have such a regard for you, that I am unwilling to take an answer which must separate us forever. Think then, before you speak; and let my making you this generous offer, and preventing your exposing yourself in vain, teach you a return of proper gratitude."

"I want not a moment to determine be-

" nour."

cc Then

66

"

66

46

40 9

c t

· a

" t

cc tl

es ne

"fait

CE DO

e th

of fo

" le

Wino

Adventures of a GUINEA. 267 "Then take the confequence; and blame " yourfelf, when it is too late."-"I will; if any blame falls on me. And on now that I fee you are ferious, in return " for the notice you have so generously given " me, I let you know, that I have obviated " the advantage you flatter yourfelf you have over me, by conforming legally to your religion, before I was married to you."-" Confusion! what is that you say? When, "where did you conform?"-"When I went to the wedding of my " coufin; as you will find upon enquiry, which I advise you to make, before you of proceed farther in a scheme, that can only " expose you to worse infamy than that, " with which you threatened me."-"Infernal witch! Was this your love?"-" No, it was the prudence of my friends. " My love could harbour no doubt of " you; but they knew you better; and took " this honest, wise precaution to guard "against villainy, which I now am fensible " they forefaw; and therefore as you have " thought proper to refer me to the law, I of now tell you that I will immediately claim its protection, and declare my marriage, "nor fuffer any longer in the opinion of " the world, by a fecrecy, that was enjoined " for so base a purpose; by which I shall at " leaft have the fatisfaction of faving anowino it , wiw sid or fN 2) bud bas ; "ther

d

r

u

1,

in

0-

fle

le-

r-

71-

nat

ich

en,

ou

our

re-

be-

ho-

hen

"ther woman from falling into the fnare

Saying this, she flung out of the room, to conceal tears, which she thought would betray a weakness unworthy of her, and could

no longer restrain.

The nature of my master's meditations on this discovery may be easily conceived. He cursed that soolish fondness, which had thus led him blindfold into his own snare; and damn'd all womankind, in revenge for being soiled at his own weapons by one of the fex.

When he had vented his rage, in this manner for some time, a sudden gleam of hope flatter'd him, that what she faid might possibly have been only the instantaneous suggestion of refentment and despair, without being really true. Pleased with the thought he fent directly to make the proper enquiry, the refult of which confirm'd the defeat of all his defigns. But this was not the only mortification he fuffer'd. His wife, the moment she left him, went to her father, and discovering to him her husband's baseness, he supported her in her resolution of declaring her marriage, as the most proper means to prevent his forming any farther schemes against her.

The consequence is obvious. The publick received such a curious piece of scandal with pleasure; and paid respect to his wife, if only

to shew contempt for him; particularly the women, who made her's the cause of the fex, as he had precluded all farther designs

upon himfelf, by marriage.

a beam of 1949, 6 (1991), is of the

0

d

d

e

n se of re

This though, however flattering to her vanity and refentment at the time, only widened a breach, that she wished to close. His pride was picqued to disappoint her design, as she had his, and he left her to languish out the rest of her life in worse than widowhood, and repent of the folly of attempting to attach to herself a man who she knew had betrayed other's of the fex.

As for my master, this detection made him desperate. He threw off every appearance of regard even to common decency, which he thought could no longer be of use to him, and determined to bear down fcandal, by glorying in his vices; in the performance of which gallant resolution, he gave me to a stage-dancer, who gave me to an halfpay officer, who gave me to a tavern-keeper, &c .- Vol. II. - Page 98.-

t dram ton up, beior in aucht hein graff -under days wit he had being orders and a pelicy of roses in the meller increasing a Circulated College and Alexander States and the College and th

CHAP. XVIII.

CHRYSAL gives an account of certain interestirg occurrences. An extraordinary definition of a common word. Great expectations disappointed. The consequence of planning in the closet the operations of the field, with the origin of that sagacious practice.

HRYSAL's master in the course of d bis journey from VIENNA, to LISBON, falls in with one of the armies engaged in carrying on the war.)

"The army through which my mafter " was obliged to pals, as I have faid, though

" paid by England, and the flower of it com-" posed of Britons, was commanded by a

"German general, in difgraceful acknow-

" ledgement of the want of military merit

" equal to fuch a charge, in the natives."-

Vol. 11 .- Page 215.

Such an indignity to a people ever famed in war, and jealous of their honour, must appear unaccountable; but the web of human policy is woven in fo mysterious a manner, as to reconcile inconsistencies still harder to be accounted for, on the common principles of reason.

When

ma

mi far

th an

no w

W

ju

e

f

When this army was first formed, the command of it was given to a Briton, whose military abilities had in their opening dawn faved his country from ruin, and now in their meridian promifed to raise his name to an equality in glory, with those of most renown, in the long lift of heroes; but the wildom of those measures, by which the world is governed, defeated expectations fo justly founded, and deprived his country for ever of the advantage of fuch abilities.

As the professed design of this army was only to observe the motions of the French. and defend the allies of England from their attacks, it was judged fufficient to make it barely of fuch force, as might effect that defence, with the affiftance of those allies themfelves. Though an inferiour army may act fuccessfully on the defensive in repelling an immediate affault upon itself, yet where its attention is extended to the defence of diftant objects, the necessity of dividing such inferiour strength, enhances the disproportion, fo as not only to defeat the defign, but also often to involve the defenders, in the ruin they were meant to avert from others.

The danger of fuch an event was evident in the present case, but some divisions in the English councils made it impossible to obviate it, by making the force of the army equal to the end, it was appointed for; certain patriots having opposed the forming N 4 of

of any such army at all, with so plausible, and popular arguments, that the sovereign was obliged to be satisfied for the present, with this shadow of one, as I may say, in expectation of being able to reinforce it, by degrees, as the patriots expected to make their compliance with such a measure, the means for gaining the end of their patriotism, that

w

in

no

as

C

u

is, raising themselves to power.

You feem furprized at my calling men, who could act with fuch a view, and oppose a measure, which I have said to be founded on every motive of honour and justice, by the respectable name of patriots. But in this, as in very many other things, the name remains after the idea, it was defigned to represent, is lost. Patriotism, that once meant the noblest exertion of difinterested virtue, by which every at ention to private advantage was facrificed to the publick good, fignifies now no more, than an opposition to the measures of government, whether right or wrong, supported by such pretences, as are most likely to inflame the passions of the people, till the governours are fo embarraffed, as to be obliged to admit the patriots to a share of their power, when they directly throw off the mask, for some other to take up; and do themselves the very things, which they before declaimed against with such noise and vehemence. By this general description I do not absolutely preclude a few particular excepexceptions; nor deny the merit of some men. who even in modern times have deferved the name, in all the honour of its original mean-

ing.

n

n

y

r

S

t

The nature of fuch a command, and the improbability of its fuccess would have deterred any man from accepting it, who was not actuated by principles fo truly patriotick, as to make him difregard every other motive, for the mere possibility of serving his

country.

As the abilities of the general often make up for the weakness of an army, the Britons under his command confiding in him, looked upon the fuperiour force of their enemies with pleasure, as promising them the greater glory. Nor was this confidence without foundation; he had led them to victory before, when they scarce deserved the name of regular forces; and had fince, with unwearied care, affisted their native valour with every advantage of the most judicious discipline. Under fuch a commander therefore, what might not such troops hope to do? But a difficulty ftill more diffreffing than the inferiority of his force disappointed all those hopes.

Military operations are fo complicated, that every motion of an army requires a correspondent one, in that opposed to it. The obvious truth of this shews the sagacity of planning, in the closet, the operations of the field. Particular objects indeed may be

proposed; but the method of accomplishing them must be left to the judgment of the commander, as occasion may direct, it being absolutely impossible to foresee, and provide for all the instantaneous contingencies, which must make an immediate deviation from any system, that could have been laid down, indispensibly necessary. Where this discretionary power is abridged, and the motions of a general marked out for him, it must be from the fault of his adversaries, if he per-

forms any thing of consequence.

The first, who introduced this scheme of shackling a commander, were churchmen, who pussed up by the power, which their influence over the weakness of princes gave them, disdained to appear incapable of any thing; and therefore as their want of military knowledge would not permit their undertaking the actual command of armies, they took this method of shewing their abilities and authority, by directing how the commanders of them should proceed; a method, however absurd in itself, so flattering to human self-sufficiency, that princes adopted it after, when age or infirmity prevented their leading their forces in the field.

tes ed to stock belegger span in the pastenant

-D19

d vara de la companio C H A P.

Co

rat

an

the

ab

CO

an

tu

to

it pi

ne

no un the countries he was lest

ersi from CHAP. XIX.

Continued. The natural event of such a situation. The general, victorious over himself, quits the pursuit of military glory for the practice of the virtues of peace. Persidy of the enemy justly punished. The army is formed again under the command of a GERMAN, and a sugar-plumb given to the English to stop their mouths at such an insult.

DISTRESSED more by directions of this kind than even by the weakness of his army, the British general took the field, rather in obedience to his duty than from any hope of success, and literally to observe the motions of an enemy whom he was not able to oppose.

The event was as he foresaw. The enemy superior in strength, and at liberty to seize every advantage, while he could only act in consequence of orders, given at a distance, and impossible to be always proper, soon turned his attention from the defence of others to the preservation of his own army. But even this, the circumstances he was in made it impossible for all his judgment and intrepidity to effect, though displayed in a manner that made his name immortal, otherwise than

than by giving up the countries he was fent to defend, on the best terms he could pro-

cure, and disarming his own troops.

Mortifying as fuch a necessity must have been to an heart panting for glory, his conduct under it reflected more real honour upon him, than any victory gained against probability, at the imminent hazard of the loss of his whole army could have done, as it shewed that he was superior even to the defire of fame, when clashing with the interest of his country.

But they who had driven him to this necessity, by disabling him from pursuing the dictates of his own judgment, thought proper to view his conduct in another light, and censure in him their own errours. The honest indignation of conscious virtue could not brook treatment fo difingenuous. In justice to himself, therefore, he resigned all military command, and, quitting the profession of arms for ever, devoted the remainder of his days to the practice of every virtue of peace.

As to the countries which he had been thus disappointed from defending, their troubles ended not so easily. The enemy, in the infolence of power, foon broke through the terms on which they had been given up, and treated the army, that had submitted on the fecurity of public faith, with every in-

stance of the most flagrant injustice.

All

jo

of

W

to

C

m li

n

fe

ft

h

h

in

ve

n-

p-

0-

ofs

it

re

of

e-

ne

)-

d

)-

ot

e

y

3

All obligations are mutual. The breach of one party therefore disengages the other. Provoked by fuch perfidy, the injured army joined the natives, and arose with all the fury of revenge upon their oppressors. Such at-The tyrants tacks are not to be refifted. were driven out of all their conquests; and, to prevent their recovery of them, the army was formed again of force fufficient to accomplish the end proposed, and the command of it given to a German of proved abilities, free from the restrictions which had made those of the late commander of no effect, his miscarriage having shewn the abfurdity of them; and the English patriots, who had before opposed the raising any such army, having succeeded in their views of getting into power, and now aiding the defign with all their influence; " though to palliate their " difgrace, and to fatisfy the jealoufy of the " English, they had the imaginary privilege of being immediately under a commander " of their own, and subject only to their own " laws, in all things except the operations of " the war, when they were of necessity to obey " the German commander in chief."-Vol. II. p. 215.

FINIS.

The state of a few tipes of a few transfer.

All poligations are mutual. The breaks of our party therefore catengages the other. Provoked by high perfidy, the ship ed arroy coined the natives, and arole with all the tery of teverage upon their opprelions. Buch artacks are took to be regited. The tyrisits were driven out of all their conquells; and; to prevent their recovery or their, the stury was formed again of force fail cient to accomplife the end proposed, and the cominated of it given to a Commit of proved after lights, free trues the retiriotions which and made choice of the late commander of no ettect, his milearning buying thewn the abfacility of the nit and the English retrient, who had before opposed the railing any fuch anny. having hereasts a their rietle of getting into power, and now aiding the delign with all their infleence; " though to parmie their d grace, and to Geisty the jealouty of the " Kagbib, they had the imaginary privilege " of boing immississely under a coordrander hwe riser or el o freidel bas awe rade to M stays, in all things except the operations as the war, when they were of preceded to they " the German Younnander in chief." - Val. II.

.2. 1 M 1 7



